

# Land use changes and development of the non-forest woody vegetation in the Danubian Lowland in Slovakia

Ján Supuka\*, Karol Šinka

*Slovak University of Agriculture in Nitra, Faculty of Horticulture and Landscape Engineering, Tr. A. Hlinku 2, SK – 949 76 Nitra, Slovak Republic*

## Abstract

The aim of this paper is to assess the changes in the landscape structure of the Žitný Ostrov territory and in the woody species of the non-forest woody vegetation (NFWV) over the past 120 years. Within the assessed periods of 1892, 1949, 1969 and 2015, the shares of arable land increased by 17% while the ratio of the built-up areas with gardens increased by 3.7%. At the same time, natural habitats, grassland, waterlogged meadows and wetlands decreased by 26%. These changes, concerning small mosaic plots as well as large cultural blocks, were caused by the intensification of agriculture after 1948. Ecological stability and biodiversity of these areas has decreased. Thereafter 60 windbreaks were planted from 1951–1952 in an area of 30 ha. In total, 37 woody species were planted, of which 22 were alien species. After 25 years (in 1976), 19 of the same windbreaks were surveyed, observing 16 native and 12 alien woody species. During these periods, many rare alien and coniferous species died. In 2015, 13 windbreaks with 39 woody species were identified, both in the tree and the shrubby layer. The downside is that four of the long-time surviving species are invasive trees.

**Key words:** landscape structure changes; windbreaks; woody species; long-term monitoring

Editor: Bohdan Konôpka

## 1. Introduction

Geography and ecology potential, land-use forms and land ownership represent the basic criteria for the cultural landscape assessment and design (Kupka 2010; Verešová & Supuka 2012; Kuča et al. 2015). Land use changes are projected into historical and current landscape structure in composition, size and distribution of landscape elements in landscape image, as well as character in its cultural and perceived values (Hernik 2009; Agnoletti et al. 2010; Supuka et al. 2011). Pucherová (2004) published the results of landscape structure development and changes in five studied cadastral territories of Nitra suburbs in the time horizons of 1863, 1892, and 2002. By comparison of historical and current landscape structure, the author has identified a 10 – 30% decreasing share of landscape elements significant for ecological stability. This group includes forests, non-forest woody vegetation, permanent grassland, old traditional fruit orchards, and mosaic small size plots. However, there was an increase of large blocks of arable land, intensive fruit orchards, and new established water basins. The structural changes in the category of vineyard landscapes were assessed in studied territories of Slovakia

in the cadastre Čajkov, Nitrianske Hrnčiarovce in Nitra vineyard region (Verešová & Supuka 2013), the traditional Small Carpathian vineyard region (Štefunková et al. 2011), as well as in the Bavaria vineyard region in Germany (Petit et al. 2012). Emphasis was given to landmark changes and their cultural and historical values for potential recreation use as well (Cieszewska et al. 2010).

Structural changes of the agriculture landscape in Slovakia with regard to the identification of historical structure elements and their changes were published by Špulerová et al. (2011). In the same way, landscape structure changes and development in the Podoubraví region in the Czech Republic were assessed (Lipský et al. 2011). Land use and land cover changes in China and the United States over the past 300 years were compared. A noticeable trend was the increase in croplands and decrease of the forest and grassland / shrub land areas in both USA and China, however, in different proportions. Larger areas of decrease were found in China, since the United States is a younger cultural country (Fanneng et al. 2015).

In the agricultural landscape structure, we shall work on the important assumption that the non-forest woody vegetation (NFWV) is an effective landscape ecological

\*Corresponding author. Ján Supuka, e-mail: [jan.supuka@uniag.sk](mailto:jan.supuka@uniag.sk)

stability element. Its share in the countryside is closely related to the historical development, changes in land-use forms, intensification of agriculture technologies, and land ownership (Pucherová 2004; Kupka 2010; Kuczman 2014). In the whole Slovakia, the share of non-forest woody vegetation in agriculture landscapes was defined as 5 to 12% depending on geography and relief conditions, land-use form and land cover (Supuka et al. 2013). In France, conditions were identified as a 5 – 15% share of NFWV in agricultural landscape (Soltner 1991) per different phytogeographical conditions.

Important results were achieved in research of forest and windbreaks on biomass production and crop yields in agriculture landscape (Tutka 2010). The cumulative effectiveness of forest and windbreaks in distance by 100 and 150 m from forest margin caused yield increase of assessed crops by 7 – 15% depending on altitude, climate and soil characteristics. Stated value of agro-production forest function reaches 0.66 – 2.32 € year<sup>-1</sup> ha<sup>-1</sup> according to the agro-climate regions of Slovakia (Tutka 2010).

The non-forest woody vegetation, as an important landscaping element with significant gene pool value, represents an old, oversized specimen of rare trees considered as elements of tree heritage (Morton 1998; Supuka & Pucherová 2013; Demková & Lipský 2017). In the lowland landscape of south-western Slovakia, woody species richness of *Prunus* genus in dispersed woody vegetation in the agriculture landscapes was surveyed (Baranec et al. 2011). In the protective forest belts on the territory of three forest units of the south-western Slovakia, 59 woody species were inventoried, including 19 native species (Varga et al. 1999). Great attention was paid to the identification and assessment of old fruit trees in the dispersed landscape vegetation. In Hriňová cadastre, 10 varieties were surveyed and in Hrušov cadastre, 13 varieties (Zrníková et al. 2014). The occurrences of Service Tree, *Sorbus domestica*, and Black mulberry, *Morus nigra*, as rare fruit trees were identified in 24 localities of agriculture landscape in NFWV elements (Paganová & Bakay 2010) and also in traditional mosaic structure vineyards of Western Slovakia (Verešová 2011). Service Tree is richly present in the geographical territory of White Carpathy in South Moravia, where its specific varieties were identified in 12 localities (Tetera et al. 2006).

In the Alpine pastoral landscape, participation of line form NFWV elements including hedges, as well as their effectiveness in landscape image and biodiversity was studied (Kurz et al. 2011). Planning, establishment, and management of NFWV in the rural agricultural landscapes of Slovakia have been published by Tóth et al. (2016), while the situation in the Czech Republic was described by Salašová (2001).

The aim of this paper is to assess the landscape structure development within the last almost 120 years, with emphasis on spatial changes in the non-forest woody vegetation and its woody plant biodiversity.

## 2. Material and methods

The chosen study area was the Žitný Ostrov territory, which is a part of geographical unit Danubian Lowland in the south-western Slovakia. In this territory, woody species composition and space structure of chosen protective forest belts (windbreaks) has been compared in three time horizons of 1951, 1976 and 2015. Thanks to one published contribution (Gemerský 1961), we have acquired an original document about space distribution of 60 windbreaks that were established in agriculture landscapes in the years 1951–1952. Spatial distribution of windbreaks on the Žitný Ostrov territory, as well as case planting plans of applied woody species is documented by the originally published maps and plans. The list of planted woody plant species is composed of plants representing wide species diversity. Later in 1976, we surveyed the woody species and spatial composition at 19 chosen windbreaks in six cadastral territories of the Žitný Ostrov territory, Dobrohošť, Horný Bar, Bodíky, Hubice, Malá and Velká Paka. More particular investigation and assessment of the NFWV, their historical development, and the spatial distribution was provided in four time horizons (1892, 1949, 1969 and 2015). The assessment was accomplished on the landscape segments covering the cadastral territories of Dunajský Klátov (353.9 ha), Malé Dvorníky (747.6 ha), Velké Dvorníky (139.2 ha), Jahodná (110.0 ha), Vydrany (118.9 ha); in total 1968.03 ha. Assessed landscape structure development and changes between established time horizons were accomplished by using historical maps: III. Military survey and cadastral maps (1892), aerial photo (1949, 1969) and ortho photo maps. (Used sources: © Geodetic and Cartographic Institute Bratislava – GKU Bratislava, © Topographic Institute – TOPU Banská Bystrica and © National Forest Centre – NLC Zvolen).

Non-forest woody vegetation (NFWV) was assessed through comprehensive field surveying (2015) according to the following criteria: origin (natural, cultural, mixed), spatial formation (line, group, area), and functional type (road and water body accompanying, windbreak, grove, etc.). Woody species composition in NFWV was assessed according to the growth categories (tree, shrub, climbing), as well as the share of occurrence and abundance of the tree and shrubby layers separately (Supuka et al. 2013).

Woody species proportion according to origin was assessed in NFWV elements by modified index of synantropisation (Jurko 1990; Supuka et al. 2013) in the equation form:

$$IS = \frac{N_a}{N_n} \quad [1]$$

Where:  $N_a$  – number of alien woody species;  $N_n$  – number of native species.

Indexes were calculated for NFWV assessed in 1967 and 2015. The aim of this approach was to compare woody species changes and windbreak composition during a period of 60 years after they had been established.

From the terminology point of view, we should explain the differences in woody spatial formations. Windbreaks represent line form woody formations planted on lowlands with anti-wind erosion effect and climate mitigation. The term notion is used mainly in western literature sources, e.g. USA, UK, France (Insley 1988; Soltner 1991). Forest protection belts mean windbreaks and protective infiltration woody belts on slopes. Their main effect is wind and water anti-erosion. Notion is used mainly in forestry literature including Russian sources (Gemerský 1961; Varga et al. 1991; Tutka 2010). Non-forest woody vegetation (NFWV) includes all spatial woody formations in agriculture landscape, meaning linear forms (windbreaks, infiltration belts, accompanying belts along water streams and roads, tree alleys), area forms (small forests, groves, game refuges), and group and solitaire trees in rural landscape (Supuka et al. 2013; Demková & Lipský 2017).

### **3. Results**

#### **3.1. Assessment of the landscape structure development and changes at the Žitný Ostrov territory**

The plantings of the first windbreaks on the Žitný Ostrov territory in the south-western Slovakia was closely connected to socio-economic changes after the World War II. Changes in the agricultural landscape can be seen in size, proportion, and distribution of landscape elements in the territorial space. They were influenced by the economic development, production and processing technologies, demography, and human settlement development. The expressive change seen in the agricultural landscape in Slovakia in the second half of the 20th century was also influenced by the process of technological intensification and land ownership. An interesting experiment in 1949 was the establishment of a rice field on 24.77 ha in the rated landscape segments (see Fig. 3 and Table 1). The establishment of large cooperative farms in the lowlands started prior to 1949–1950, mainly in the lowlands Podunajská, Východoslovenská and Záhorská. These changes can be observed in the lack of small size mosaic plot structure, in alternation by large cultural blocks, the removal of many natural valuable biotopes, drainage of some wetlands, and the removal of terraced balks, banks and line borders between plots. In many cases, permanent grasslands and spatial elements of non-forest woody vegetation have decreased as well. Moreover, new water canals and dams were built. These landmark changes are reflected as new features in the compositional aesthetic characteristics and dimensions of the study areas.

The landscape ecological stability has decreased, as have culture-historical values and natural biodiversity. However, there was an increase in the cultural diversity of plant and animal varieties. The potential threat of water and wind erosion was increased. The landscape structure changes are generally seen in aerial photos of the country segment between 1949 and 1969 on the Žitný Ostrov territory (Fig. 1). Particular landscape structure changes and development within rated periods of 1892, 1949, 1969, and 2015 are presented on the attached maps (Fig. 2–5); the area share of landscape elements is given in Table 1.

The map and table show that in 1892, arable land was dominant, with more than 63% as the element of the cultural landscape and terra ferma. The second position belongs to natural elements of grasslands and waterlogged meadows used mostly as pastures. In total, these areas covered 29% of the assessed territory. These landscape elements should be considered as natural or near natural with high ecology and biodiversity benefits. The assessed lowlands were only 3.46% share of forest. This area had mostly alluvial character and involved predominating willow and poplar woody species. Colonization was quite low in the built-up areas at 1.42 ha, only because the landscape segment represented open rural country. The situation changed in 1949, when there was a rapid reduction in the share of grasslands and waterlogged meadows used as pastures, only 4.85%. There was an increase in the share of built-up areas and gardens. Water lines increased due to the wetland drainage and construction of the canals. An interesting experiment in 1949 was the establishment of a rice field on 24.77 ha in the rated landscape segments. When the countryside in 1949 and 1969 was compared, the landscape structure changed from small plot mosaics to larger cultural blocks of mainly arable land. The share of NFWV increased noticeably due to new plantings of windbreaks from 1951–1952 (Fig. 2, 3, 4; Table 1). The lands status between the period of 1969 and 2015 should be considered as relatively balanced in arable land, grassland and forest cover. The share of NFWV representing predominantly windbreaks has significantly increased and reached 6.56% in the rated landscape segment (Fig. 4, 5).

#### **3.2. Assessment of the first windbreaks plantings at the Žitný Ostrov territory**

As described in the previous chapter, in order to eliminate and mitigate negative features and processes in the landscape, new windbreaks or protective forest belts were established as a part of the non-forest woody vegetation (NFWV). According to the examples of the United States, Canada, Russia, Ukraine, China, France and other countries, the master plan for windbreaks establishment on the Žitný Ostrov territory in south-western part of Slovakia was elaborated. This area was

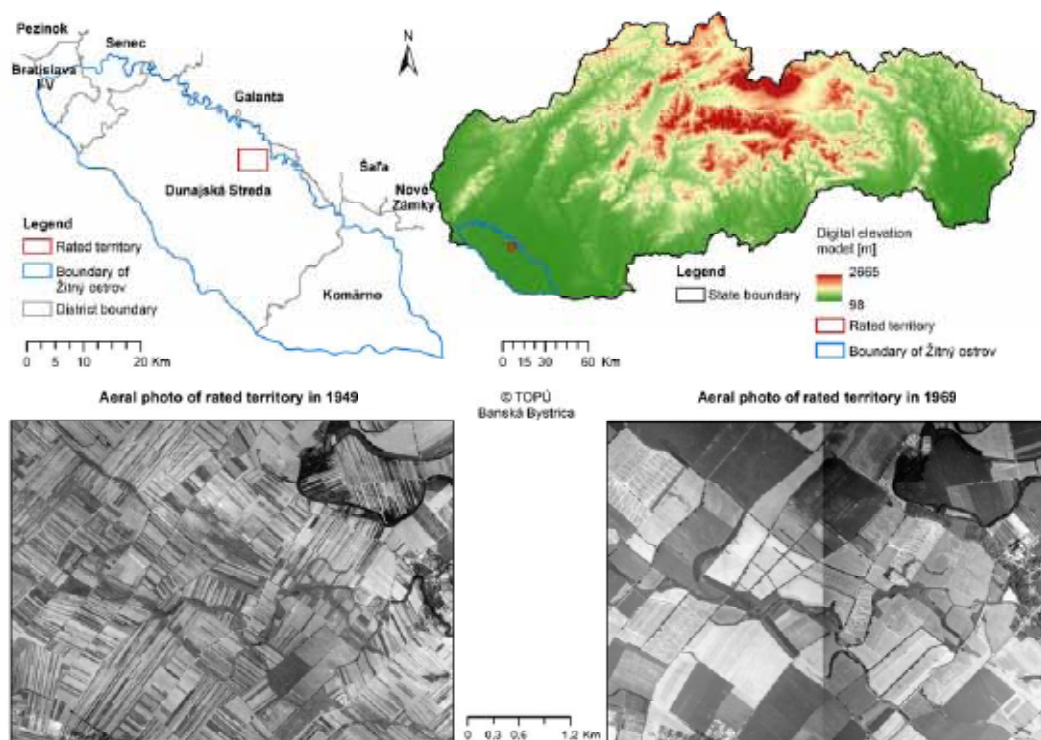


Fig. 1. Landscape structure changes at assessed landscape segment of the Žitný Ostrov territory between 1949 and 1969 time horizons. (Elaborated: Šinka 2017).

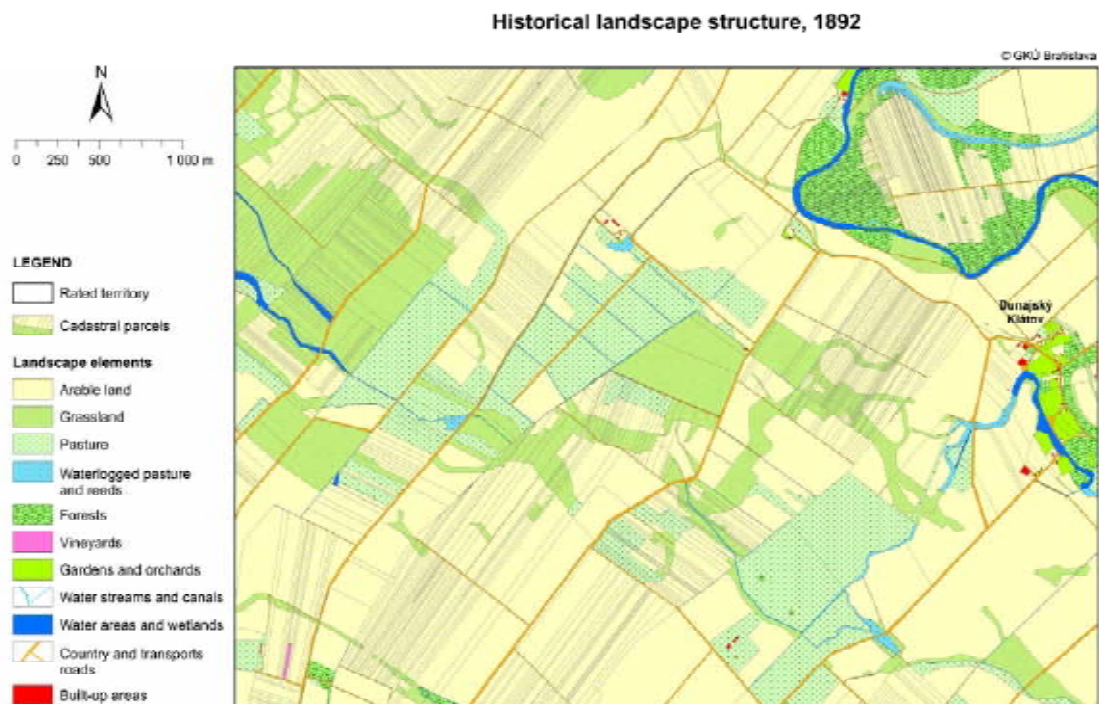
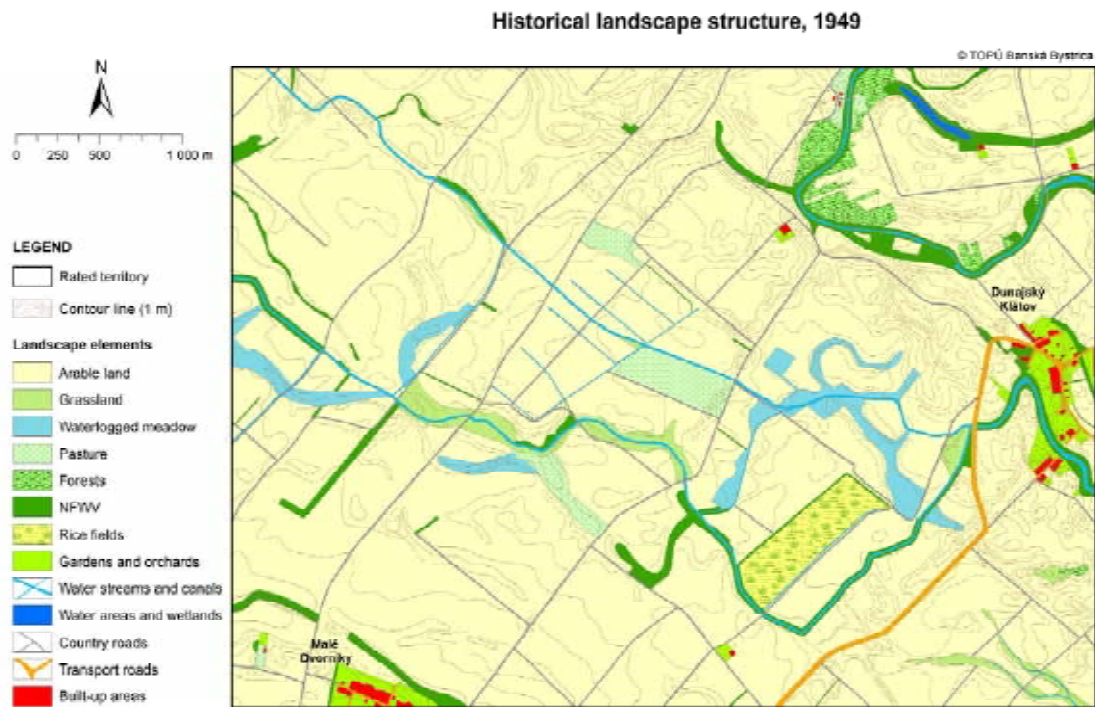
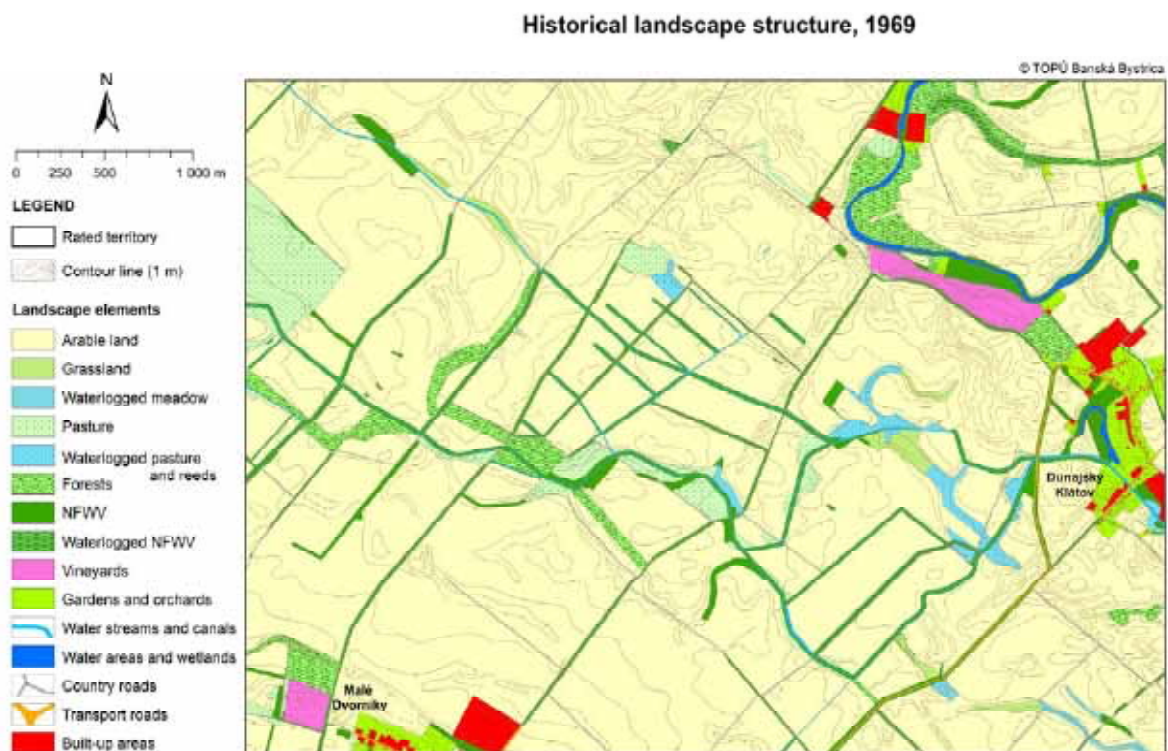


Fig. 2. Landscape structure of the assessed country segment and share of identified landscape elements in 1892. (Elaborated: Šinka 2017).

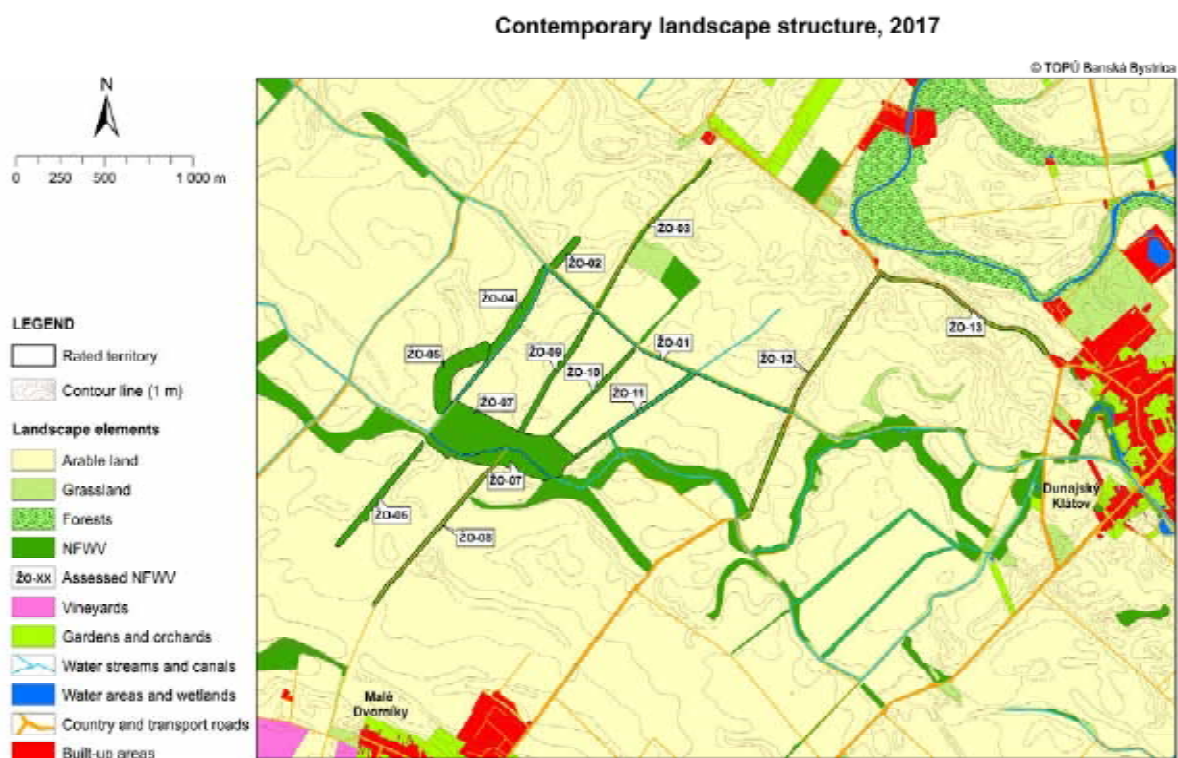




**Fig. 3.** Landscape structure of rated country segment and share of identified landscape elements in 1949. (Elaborated: Šinka 2017).



**Fig. 4.** Landscape structure of rated country segment and share of identified landscape elements in 1969. (Elaborated: Šinka 2017).



**Fig. 5.** Landscape structure of rated country segment and share of identified landscape elements in 2015. (Elaborated: Šinka 2017).

**Table 1.** Historical and contemporary landscape structure in assessed cadastral territories of the Žitný Ostrov territory at south western Slovakia.

| Landscape elements            | Area [ha] by years |          |         |         | Contribution [%] by years |        |        |        |
|-------------------------------|--------------------|----------|---------|---------|---------------------------|--------|--------|--------|
|                               | 1892               | 1949     | 1969    | 2015    | 1892                      | 1949   | 1969   | 2015   |
| Arable land                   | 1244.72            | 1622.39  | 1583.35 | 1586.40 | 63.25                     | 82.44  | 80.45  | 80.61  |
| Grassland                     | 306.25             | 29.14    | 11.43   | 58.34   | 15.56                     | 1.48   | 0.58   | 2.96   |
| Waterlogged meadow            | —                  | 46.55    | 3.21    | —       | —                         | 2.37   | 0.16   | —      |
| Pasture                       | 254.41             | 30.73    | 60.25   | —       | 12.93                     | 1.56   | 3.06   | —      |
| Waterlogged pasture and reeds | 13.59              | —        | 17.77   | —       | 0.69                      | —      | 0.90   | —      |
| Forests                       | 68.05              | 22.71    | 63.26   | 50.86   | 3.46                      | 1.15   | 3.21   | 2.58   |
| NFWV                          | —                  | 79.61    | 99.72   | 129.06  | —                         | 4.05   | 5.07   | 6.56   |
| Waterlogged NFWV              | —                  | —        | 6.90    | —       | —                         | —      | 0.35   | —      |
| Vineyards                     | 0.39               | 24.77 RF | 18.79   | 6.34    | 0.02                      | 1.26   | 0.95   | 0.32   |
| Gardens and orchards          | 11.32              | 24.25    | 33.32   | 31.40   | 0.58                      | 1.23   | 1.69   | 1.60   |
| Water streams and canals      | 7.15               | 28.63    | 14.51   | 7.52    | 0.36                      | 1.45   | 0.74   | 0.38   |
| Water areas and wetlands      | 4.38               | 2.10     | 9.11    | 10.23   | 0.88                      | 0.11   | 0.46   | 0.52   |
| Country roads                 | 43.41              | 38.09    | 17.86   | 32.81   | 2.21                      | 1.94   | 0.91   | 1.67   |
| Transport roads               | —                  | 11.89    | 5.29    | —       | —                         | 0.60   | 0.27   | —      |
| Built- up areas               | 1.42               | 7.15     | 23.26   | 55.08   | 0.07                      | 0.36   | 1.18   | 2.80   |
| Sum                           | 1968.03            | 1968.03  | 1968.03 | 1968.03 | 100.00                    | 100.00 | 100.00 | 100.00 |

Explanation: — landscape element has not been identified, RF – rice field (see Fig. 3).

planted between 1951 and 1952 as the first territory. We have acquired the original results and conclusions that were later published in 1961 (Gemerský 1961). These results provided basic documentation for the succeeding research of chosen windbreaks from the viewpoint of woody species and spatial composition. The spacing of 60 established windbreaks on the Žitný Ostrov territory are shown on a copy of the original map (Fig. 6) and the planting scheme (Fig. 7) of the applied woody species (origin elaborated by Gemerský 1961). For windbreaks establishment 13,155 pieces of forest plant stocks were used, obtained from three arboriculture nurseries. From

the nursery in Banská Štiavnica, 4,185 pieces of woody plants were acquired, in the following species composition: *Acer platanoides* L., *A. pseudoplatanus* L., *A. rubrum* L., *A. tataricum* L., *Fraxinus americana* L., *F. excelsior* L., *F. pubescens* Lam. (*F. pennsylvanica* Marsh.), *Ailanthus glandulosa* Desf., *Malus eleyi* Hesse (*M. domestica* Borkh. 'Eleyi'), *Carya ovata* K. Koch, *Chaenomeles lagenaria* Koidz., *Gleditsia triacanthos* L., *Chamaecyparis lawsoniana* Parl., *Picea pungens* Engelm., *Pinus nigra* Arnold., *Maackia amurensis* Rupr., *Phellodendron amurense* Rupr. From the nursery in Gabčíkovo, 3,390 pieces in the following woody species were imported: *Populus x euroa-*

*mericana* (Dode) Guinier (*P. x canadensis* Moench), cv. *Robusta*, *Marilandica*, *Serotina*, *P. deltoides* Marsch, *P. alba* L., *Tilia platyphyllos* Scop. From Dobor (Baka) nursery, 5,580 pieces of the following woody species were acquired: *Acer negundo* L., *Quercus robur* L., *Juglans nigra* L., *Aesculus hippocastanum* L., *Alnus incana* (L.) Moench, *Ulmus campestris* L., *Prunus mahaleb* L., *P. spinosa* L., *Salix alba* L., *S. fragilis* L., *S. viminalis* L., *S. caprea* L., *Myricaria germanica* Desv. (*Tamarix germanica* L.), *Morus alba* L., *M. nigra* L. Together from the three arboriculture nurseries, 13,155 pieces in 37 woody plant species were acquired and planted, from which 22 were alien species.

According to the original master plan, the plantings of woody species were applied in different compositions (Fig. 7), the windbreaks consisted of 5 – 7 rows with a width span of 5 – 12 m and from 100 to 1 000 m in length. Row spacing was 1.3 m on average and between woody plants in each row, there was a 1 and 2 m space. Considering the average exposure dates under author coordination that were planted in the assessed territory, there were almost 30 ha of windbreaks in total length of 30 km during 1951 and 1952. It was a small but very useful contribution for the windbreaks establishment in Slovakia, compared to the total area of planted windbreaks during the period of 1950–1964 in Bratislava region, which achieved a total of 342.22 ha, as stated by Gemerský (1961).

As presented in the published contribution, the plan-

tations were experimental investigations of practice character. Therefore, different combinations of woody species were chosen in the composition and planted in the rows of windbreaks (Fig. 7). Middle rows consisted of poplars (*Populus sp.*) as pioneer trees, following by the objective skeleton tree species, such as native trees of the genus *Acer*, *Quercus*, *Tilia*. The marginal rows were planted by using coniferous and alien deciduous trees. Later, ecotone shrubby woody species were also planted. Very high number of alien woody plants was identified, representing 22 species from the total 37 species used for the windbreaks.

The most attractive and rare specimen planted was *Maackia amurensis*, cultivated in arboriculture nursery Banská Štiavnica, while seeds were collected from maternal trees of the Arboretum Kysihýbel. That was how this specimen was probably introduced to the open agriculture landscape in Slovakia for the first time.

### 3.3. Assessment of the woody species composition on chosen windbreaks in 1976

In 1976, the research of woody species composition and distribution on the Žitný Ostrov territory was conducted prior to the construction of the Danube water dump. A list of investigated woody species in the windbreaks of defined territory is shown in the Table 2 (surveyed and documented by Supuka; in Benčať et al. 1984). From the

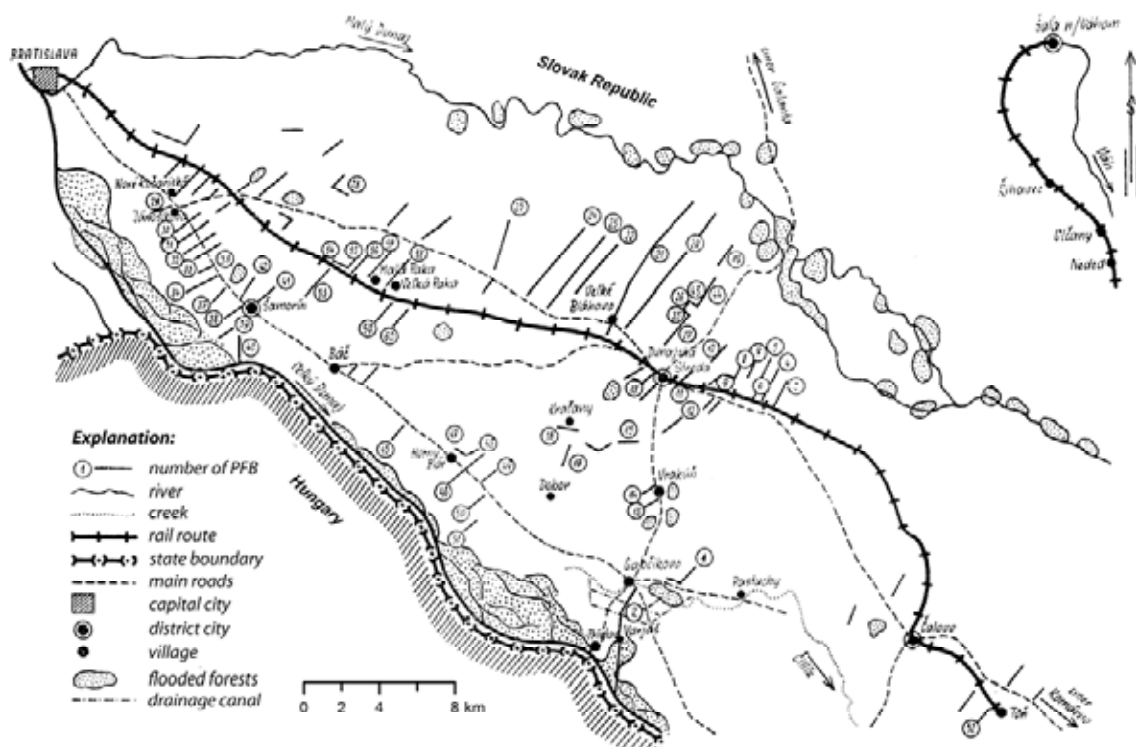
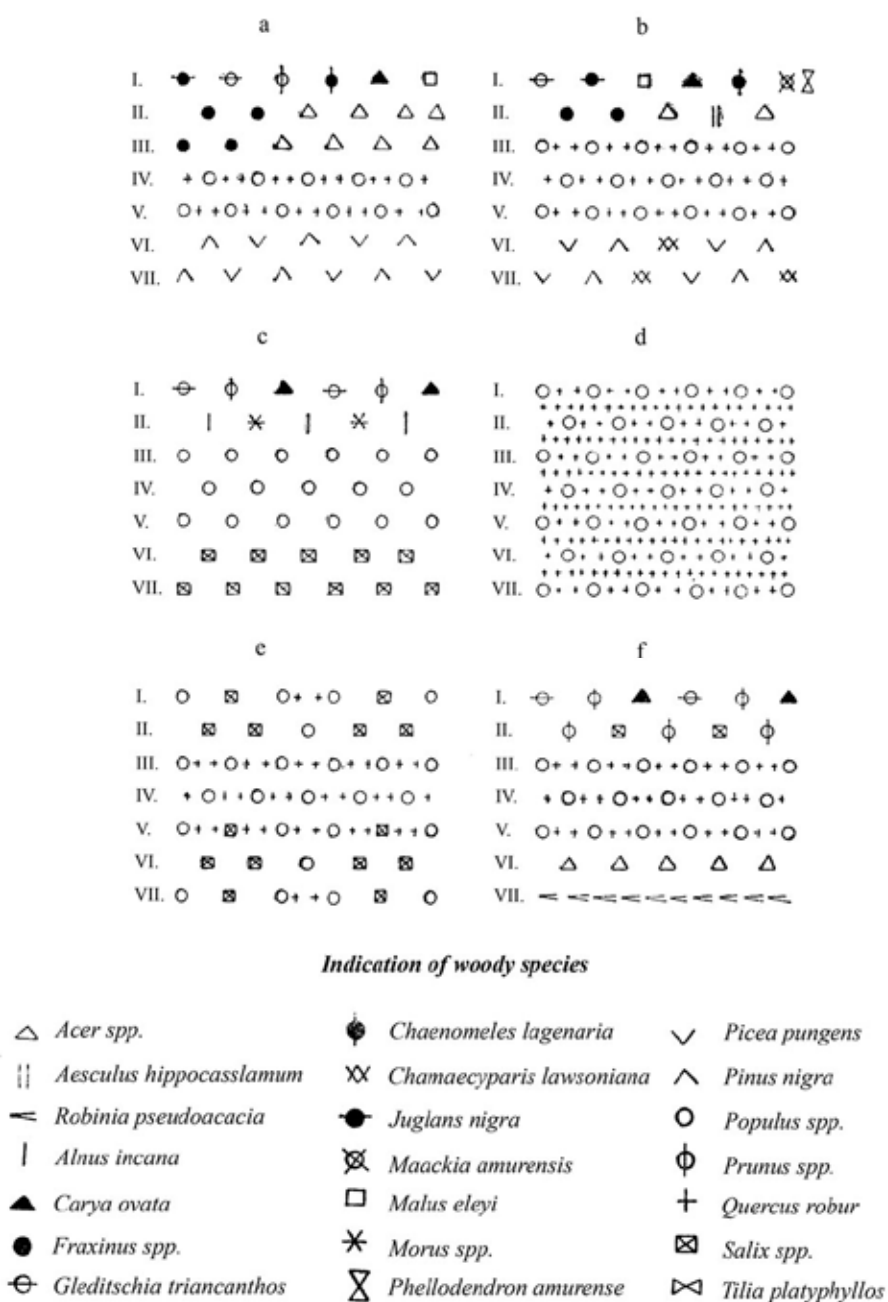


Fig. 6. Distribution of 60 planned protective forest belts (PFB) at the Žitný Ostrov territory, South- Western part of Slovakia. Original scheme has drawn by Gemerský (1961). (Adjusted by Šinka & Supuka 2016).



**Fig. 7.** Distribution of woody plant species in planting model plots (a–b) and rows (I.–VII.) in the protective forest belts (PFB). Original scheme has been drawn by Gemerský (1961) (Adjusted by Šinka and Supuka 2016).

total number of 19 assessed windbreaks, 12 of them were identified as identical to windbreaks founded in 1951–1952 (No. 23, 25, 26, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34; in Fig. 6). Concerning spatial characteristics, the windbreaks have reached 5, 10, 15 and 20 m in width and an average of 7 to 15 m in height during the past 25 years. Among the 28 inventoried woody species, 12 of them were alien. Windbreaks have achieved different density depending on the applied woody species and the number of planted rows or width of forest belt. They had 70–90% tree crown canopy or stand density. In wider windbreaks (15–20 m in width), auto-regeneration processes were identified

when a new woody species generation appeared because of natural successive processes, disseminated by wind or animal vectors.

There were certain differences between the woody species composition in the assessed periods. In 1976, neither coniferous nor deciduous woody species such as *Carya ovata*, *Chaenomeles lagenaria*, *Maackia amurensis*, *Phellodendron amurense*, *Myricaria germanica* were found. The reason might lie in the allocation of the above mentioned woody species to other than inspected and inventoried windbreaks. The plants died due to drought, water flooding, game nibbling or mechanical



damages. There was a high probability that when surveying the windbreaks in 1976, there were incorrect woody species identified, e.g. poplar hybrids, North American ashes, and rare *Maackia amurensis* and *Phelodendron amurense*. In the case of *Maackia amurensis*, there was probably an identification mistake and the trees were inventoried as *Caragana arborescens* in 1976 (see Table 2). When a direct comparison of the woody species composition between the time horizons of 1952 and 1976 was made, the investigated windbreaks were very problem-

atic. Original planting projects from 1951–1952 were inaccessible or could not be found. The projects were probably not elaborated for each windbreak separately and planting was provided per a published variable model scheme (Fig. 7).

The state of woody species composition on the Žitný Ostrov territory windbreaks looked very rich in 1976. On the one hand, it creates a variable and rare woody species gene pool; on the other hand, it is an important food source and spatial habitat for supporting animal biodi-

**Table 2.** Woody species composition in chosen windbreaks at Žitný Ostrov territory in 1976.

| Tree species layer                          | Register number of assessed windbreak |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |     |    |    |
|---|---------------------------------------|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|-----|----|----|
|   | 23                                    | 25 | 26 | 27 | 28 | 29 | 30 | 31 | 32 | 33 | 34 | 35 | 91 | 92 | 93 | 94 | 95 | 95a | 96 |    |
| <i>Acer campestre</i> L.                    |                                       | +  | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |     |    | 2  |
| <i>Acer platanoides</i> L.                  |                                       |    | +  |    | +  | +  | +  |    |    |    | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |     |    | 6  |
| <i>Ailanthus altissima</i> (Mill.) Swingle  |                                       | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  | +  | +  |    |     |    | 4  |
| <i>Caragana arborescens</i> Lam.            |                                       |    |    | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    |     |    | 2  |
| <i>Crataegus laevigata</i> (Poir) DC        |                                       |    | +  |    |    |    | +  | +  | +  | +  |    | +  |    |    | +  |    | +  |     |    | 8  |
| <i>Euonymus europaeus</i> L.                |                                       | +  | +  |    | +  | +  | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    |    |     | +  | 7  |
| <i>Fraxinus excelsior</i> L.                |                                       | +  | +  |    |    | +  |    |    |    |    | +  | +  | +  |    |    | +  |    |     |    | 7  |
| <i>Gleditsia triacanthos</i> L.             |                                       |    | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |     |    | 1  |
| <i>Juglans nigra</i> L.                     |                                       |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    |    |    | +  |    |     |    | 2  |
| <i>Juglans regia</i> L.                     |                                       |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  | +  |    |    |     |    | 2  |
| <i>Lonicera tatarica</i> L.                 |                                       |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    |     | +  | 2  |
| <i>Ligustrum vulgare</i> L.                 |                                       |    | +  |    |    | +  |    |    |    |    | +  |    |    |    |    | +  |    |     | +  | 5  |
| <i>Morus alba</i> L.                        |                                       |    |    |    |    |    | +  | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |     |    | 2  |
| <i>Negundo aceroides</i> Moench.            | +                                     | +  | +  |    | +  |    | +  | +  |    |    |    | +  | +  | +  | +  | +  | +  |     | +  | 13 |
| <i>Populus alba</i> L.                      |                                       |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |     | +  | 1  |
| <i>Populus x canadensis</i> Moench.         | +                                     |    |    | +  |    |    | +  | +  | +  | +  | +  | +  |    | +  | +  |    | +  |     |    | 11 |
| <i>Quercus robur</i> L.                     |                                       |    |    |    | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    |     | +  | 3  |
| <i>Rhamnus catharticus</i> L.               |                                       |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  | +  |    |     |    | 2  |
| <i>Robinia pseudoacacia</i> L.              | +                                     | +  | +  |    | +  | +  | +  | +  | +  | +  |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    | +   | +  | 12 |
| <i>Rosa canina</i> L.                       | +                                     | +  | +  | +  | +  |    | +  | +  | +  | +  | +  |    |    | +  |    | +  | +  | +   | +  | 15 |
| <i>Rubus fruticosus</i> L.                  |                                       |    | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    |    |    | +  |    |    |    |     |    | 3  |
| <i>Salix alba</i> L.                        |                                       |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |     | +  | 1  |
| <i>Sambucus nigra</i> L.                    | +                                     | +  |    | +  | +  | +  |    | +  | +  | +  | +  |    | +  | +  | +  |    | +  |     |    | 13 |
| <i>Sophora japonica</i>                     |                                       |    |    |    | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |     |    | 1  |
| <i>Swida sanguinea</i> (L.) Opiz.           | +                                     | +  | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    | +   | +  | 6  |
| <i>Syringa vulgaris</i> L.                  |                                       | +  | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    |     | +  | 4  |
| <i>Ulmus carpiniifolia</i> Gled. Non Borkh. | +                                     | +  | +  |    | +  | +  | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    | +  |    |     |    | 8  |
| <i>Viburnum opulus</i> L.                   |                                       |    | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |     | +  | 2  |
| Species biodiversity in windbreaks          | 7                                     | 12 | 14 | 4  | 9  | 7  | 8  | 8  | 5  | 5  | 6  | 6  | 8  | 5  | 8  | 13 | 4  | 5   | 12 |    |

Explanation: + occurred woody species in relevant windbreak.

versity. However, many alien woody species are currently considered as very invasive.

### 3.4. Assessment of woody species composition on chosen windbreaks in 2015

In 2015 we focused our research on the development of the landscape structure changes through four time horizons with regards to the share of NFWV on chosen landscape segments. Those results are described in the previous chapter. The distribution of surveyed woody vegetation formations is shown in Fig. 5. There is a real correspondence between surveyed windbreaks in 1967 and 2015, specifically in the windbreaks No. 26, 27, 35 (in 1976) and ŽO-3, ŽO-9 (in 2015). The frequency of appearance of woody species in surveyed windbreaks from ŽO-1 till ŽO-13 is given in Table 3. Overall, there were 27 deciduous woody species identified in the tree layer and 12 species in the shrubby layer. Nine of them

(9) were alien tree species. Four allochthonous species should be considered with high potential in invasive growth manifestation, as are *Ailanthus altissima* (Mill.) Swingle, *Fraxinus americana* L., *Negundo aceroides* Moench., *Robinia pseudoacacia* L. The above noted species are remnants from the first plantings, since they were found in the list of species planted in 1951–1952 and were also surveyed in 1976. All the mentioned trees have high auto-regeneration abilities at stands because of their invasive manifestation. A high percentage of the trees were identified as other alien trees, *Populus x canadensis* (Aiton) Smith and *Populus nigra* L. 'Italica'. Both species belong to traditional tree species applied in windbreaks on rated landscape segment of south-western Slovakia and have survived up to the present. Unfortunately, these alien tree species are dominant in the windbreaks. From native trees, *Populus nigra* L., *Fraxinus excelsior* L. and *Salix fragilis* L. are dominant. Concerning shrubby layer, all the inventoried species are of native origin. The char-

acteristics of the woody species in surveyed windbreaks are presented in Table 3 per tree and shrubby layers and percentage of abundance. In some windbreaks, a minimum of 9 woody species and a maximum of 18 species were identified (found in ŽO-4). As a part of the field research, we focused our attention on the inventory of oversized and old trees rather than native trees as gene pool resources. The species surveyed were e.g. *Populus alba* L. (d<sub>1,3</sub>=73 cm, tree height=30 m, crown width=25 m), *Salix fragilis* L. (140 cm/32 m/28 m), *Populus nigra* L. (91 cm/35 m/30 m), *Quercus robur* L. (92 cm/33 m/16 m). The estimated age of trees is about 150 years old.

### 3.5. Assessment of the woody species synantropisation in NFWV surveyed in 1976 and 2015

According to the method stated in chapter 2, the index synantropisation was calculated for each windbreak surveyed in 1976 and 2015. Calculated values theoretically reached within span of 0.0–1.0. Afterwards, three score groups in synantropisation level were stated: a) low level ≤ 0.25; moderate level – 0.26-0.49; high level ≥ 0.50. On

assessed of 19 NFWV in 1976 (Table 2) the distribution according to achieved synantropisation indexes is follow: low level – 4 NFWV (windbreaks No. 95, 95a), moderate – 12 NFWV (No. 23, 25, 26, 28, 29, 32, 33, 34, 91, 93, 94, 96), high level – 5 NFWV (No.27, 30, 31, 35, 92). In 2015 the synantropisation indexes on assessed 13 NFWV (Table 3) were as follow: low level – 8 NFWV (windbreaks and other line forms, No. 1, 2, 4, 5, 6, 10, 11, 12), moderate level – 5 NFWV (No. 3, 7, 8, 9, 13), high level – 0 NFWV. While surveying the NFWV in 2015 more specific mapping method was used, taking into account cover abundance in relèves. In spite of lower indexes, the results show high cover and dominance of many alien trees in NFWV, such as *Populus x canadensis*, *Robinia pseudoacacia*, *Prunus cerasifera*, *Negundo aceroides*. Less share has *Ailanthus altissima*, but in high invasive growth manifestation. These alien trees determinate landscape character in many cases. In many cases, we could observe occurrence of the fruit trees, e.g. *Juglans regia*, *Malus domestica*, *Pyrus communis*, *Morus alba*, which also support biodiversity.

**Table 3.** Woody species composition in chosen windbreaks at Žitný Ostrov territory in 2015.

| Tree species layer                            | Occurrence of woody species in % according to set number of NFWV |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
|---|--|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|
|   | 1  | 2  | 3  | 4  | 5  | 6  | 7  | 8  | 9  | 10 | 11 | 12 | 13 |
| <i>Acer campestre</i> L.                      |  |    |    | 15 |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Acer platanoides</i> L.                    |  |    |    | 5  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Acer pseudoplatanus</i> L.                 | 5  |    |    | 5  |    | 20 |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Acer pseudoplatanus</i> L. 'Atropurpureum' | 10   |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Ailanthus altissima</i> (Mill.) Swingle    |  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | 30 |
| <i>Celtis occidentalis</i> L.                 |  |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Cerasus avium</i> (L.) Moench              | 5  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Fraxinus americana</i> L.                  |  |    |    |    |    |    |    | 5  |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Fraxinus angustifolia</i> Vahl.            |  |    |    | 55 |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | 15 |    |
| <i>Fraxinus excelsior</i> L.                  |  |    |    | +  | 5  |    | 10 | 10 |    |    |    | 10 | 10 |
| <i>Juglans regia</i> L.                       |  |    |    |    |    |    | 5  | 10 | 5  |    | 5  | 30 | 20 |
| <i>Malus domestica</i> Borkh.                 | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Negundo aceroides</i> Moench.              |  |    |    |    |    | 40 |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Populus alba</i> L.                        | 5  |    |    | +  |    |    | 5  |    | 10 | 35 | 10 |    |    |
| <i>Populus x canadensis</i> Moench.           | 55   |    | 30 | 10 | 85 | 10 | 60 | 10 | 20 |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Populus x canescens</i> (Aiton) Smith.     | 10   |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | 5  |    | 10 |    |    |
| <i>Populus nigra</i> L.                       | +  |    | 10 | +  |    | 10 |    | 35 | 20 | 25 | 15 |    |    |
| <i>Populus nigra</i> L. 'Italica'             |  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |    | 5  |    |    |
| <i>Prunus cerasifera</i> Ehrh.                | +  | 5  | 20 |    | 5  |    |    |    | 10 | +  | 15 | 10 |    |
| <i>Prunus padus</i> L.                        |  |    |    |    |    |    | 10 |    |    | 20 | 5  |    |    |
| <i>Pyrus communis</i> L.                      |  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | +  |
| <i>Quercus robur</i> L.                       |  |    |    |    |    | +  |    |    |    |    | +  |    |    |
| <i>Robinia pseudoacacia</i> L.                | 5  | 90 | 10 | 5  | +  | 10 |    | 10 | 10 |    |    | 40 | 40 |
| <i>Salix alba</i> L.                          |  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    | 10 |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Salix caprea</i> L.                        | 5  |    |    | 5  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Salix cinerea</i> L.                       | 5  |    |    | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Salix fragilis</i> L.                      | 5  |    | 30 |    | 5  | 10 | 10 | 20 | 10 | 20 | 10 | 10 |    |
| Shrubby species layer                         | 1  | 2  | 3  | 4  | 5  | 6  | 7  | 8  | 9  | 10 | 11 | 12 | 13 |
| <i>Crataegus laevigata</i> (Poir.) DC         | 55   | 5  | 20 | 20 | 20 | 15 |    | 15 | 10 |    |    | 40 | 30 |
| <i>Euonymus europaeus</i> L.                  |  | 5  |    |    | 5  | 10 |    | 5  | 10 |    |    | 5  |    |
| <i>Frangula alnus</i> Mill.                   | 5  |    | 10 | 20 | 15 | 10 | 15 | 10 |    |    | 5  |    |    |
| <i>Ligustrum vulgare</i> L.                   | 5  |    |    |    |    |    |    | 5  |    |    | +  |    |    |
| <i>Prunus insititia</i> Juls.                 | +  | 5  |    | +  |    |    |    |    | +  | 10 | +  |    |    |
| <i>Prunus spinosa</i> L.                      | 5  |    | 20 | 10 | 10 |    | 30 |    |    |    |    | 10 | 30 |
| <i>Rhamnus catharticus</i> L.                 | 5  | 5  | 20 | 10 | 10 | 10 |    | 10 |    | 10 | 10 |    |    |
| <i>Rosa canina</i> L.                         | 5  | 5  | 20 |    |    | 15 |    |    |    | 5  | 5  | +  | 10 |
| <i>Salix viminalis</i> L.                     | +  |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |    |
| <i>Sambucus nigra</i> L.                      | +  | 70 | 10 | 20 | 20 | 40 | 35 | 15 | 20 | 10 | 5  | 10 | 30 |
| <i>Swida sanguinea</i> (L.) Qpiz.             | 10   | 10 |    | 20 | 20 |    | 20 | 30 | 50 | 65 | 70 | 35 |    |
| <i>Viburnum opulus</i> L.                     | 5  |    |    |    |    |    |    | 10 |    |    | 5  |    |    |

Explanation: 20-percentage of the occurrence, + less than 5% occurrence.

#### 4. Discussion

Agricultural and forest landscapes show distinct footprints of development and alternative structural changes, as was assessed in ten countries of the Carpathian region in the Eastern and Central Europe, including Slovakia, over the past 250 years (Munteanu et al. 2014). There are several published sources in the Eastern Europe countries, such as Slovakia and Czech Republic that have documented expressive landscape changes caused by consolidation and intensification of agriculture (Salašová 2001; Supuka et al. 2008; Lipský et al. 2011; Štefunková et al. 2011 and others). Although this socio-economic process does not apply for example to western European countries, their landscape structure changes are distinct due to mainly industrialization and intensification of agriculture technologies at the advanced farms, e.g. in France, Germany, England, but also in the United States and Canada (Insley 1988; Soltner 1991). In these countries, arable land share has increased and permanent grasslands decreased, which is similar to our region. In order to obtain new agriculture land, deforestation reached its maximum in the 19th century. In many localities, this trend has been continuing until the present day, e.g. in the Amazonian rain forest. Removal of natural ecosystems and valuable habitats, adjustment of natural water streams, and arrangement of new water irrigation nets were already known in Egypt, China and Middle East historical territories. The level of scientific knowledge in natural sciences was reflected in the establishment of windbreaks at the beginning of 20th century, firstly in the Western and later in Eastern countries (the United States, Canada, France, Russia, China, and former Czechoslovakia). Those were expressive and positive contributions for strengthening the land protection, ecological stability and landscape architectural values; in new scientific terms defined as ecosystem services (Reyers et al. 2009; Lampartová et al. 2015).

At the time of spontaneous establishment of new anthropogenic woody line vegetation, a number of alien species were planted. Many of those showed high adaptability level, auto-reproduction and domestication manifestation currently called invasive with negative destruction effects to natural biodiversity. To this category belong e.g. *Robinia pseudoacacia* L., *Ailanthus altissima* (Mill.) Swingle and *Negundo aceroides* Moench, very often surveyed in studied windbreaks of Slovakia and in other European countries (Soltner 1991; Supuka et al. 2013 and others). Elimination of the alien invasive plants is currently very problematic both technically and biologically. On the one hand, old and oversized native trees and cultural fruit species create a considerable cultural gene pool (Paganová & Bakay 2010; Supuka & Pucherová 2013; Verešová & Supuka 2013). On the other hand, in scattered woody vegetation a number of plant taxonomy issues or identification of species has occurred. Varieties of the genus *Prunus* are very often part of NFWV ele-

ments in agriculture landscape (Baranec et al. 2011). In historical agriculture landscape structure on upland of Slovakia, mostly shrubby species between plots on the borders and terraces were surveyed (Špulerová et al. 2017).

In many cases, the line form of NFWV is pruned and shaped as hedges especially in Western countries, e.g. in Austria (Kurz et al. 2011), France or England (Soltner 1991). These formations create uniform landscape networks with low visual value and a low potential for use as a wild life habitat. Low shares of line form NFWV and natural habitats in agriculture landscape are considered as a negative factor (Salašová 2001; Supuka et al. 2013; Demková & Lipský 2017). Contemporary share of NFWV is generally low, reaching 3 – 10% on average (Insley 1988; Pucherová 2004; Supuka et al. 2013; Kuczman 2014). There are attempts to establish an EU Foundation for new elements within the framework of European Agriculture Policy (EAP) in order to increase the share to 8 – 12%.

#### 5. Conclusions

The land cover changes on Žitný Ostrov territory were assessed within the rated periods of 1892, 1949, 1969, and 2015. The landscape elements, pasture, grassland, waterlogged meadows and wetlands were found at a rapid decrease in area share from 29% land cover in 1892 to 2.96% in 2015. This caused a decrease in ecological stability and biodiversity. In the same period, arable land has increased by 17% and built-up areas by 2.7%. Amelioration of natural water areas and wetlands was also caused by the construction of water drainage canals used for irrigation system. Small mosaic plots were altered as large cultural plots increased between 1949 and 1969.

The investigation of NFWV started by examining the original planting schemes and the list of applied woody species in the new established windbreaks from period of 1951–1952. Unfortunately, planting projects for protective forest belts were not found. More than 13 thousand pieces in 37 woody species, including 22 alien species, were received and planted from three arboriculture nurseries. In the assessed territory, almost 30 ha of windbreaks in total length 30 km were established. Many applied alien woody species were attractive in that time, e.g. *Maackia amurensis*, *Phellodendron amurense*, *Morus alba* *Gleditsia triacanthos*, or from the group of coniferous, e.g. *Chamaecyparis lawsoniana*, *Picea pungens*, *Pinus nigra*. In 1967, from total number of 19 assessed windbreaks, 12 were identified as identical to windbreaks planted in 1951–1952. Currently, 28 woody species were identified, including 12 alien ones. Therefore, there are less woody species today than in 1952. In 2015 the research focused on the development of landscape structure changes through four time horizons with regards to the share of NFWV in the chosen

landscape segment. Thirteen windbreaks were surveyed, while real coincidences between 1967 and 2015 were at three windbreaks No. 26, 27, 35 (in 1976) and ŽO-3, ŽO-9 (in 2015). At all windbreaks, 27 deciduous woody species in tree layers were identified, including 9 alien species. Four allochthonous species should be considered with high potential in invasive growth manifestation as are *Ailanthus altissima*, *Fraxinus americana*, *Negundo aceroides*, and *Robinia pseudoacacia*. These woody species are mostly remnants from the first plantings, because they were found in the list planted in 1951–1952 and were surveyed in 1976 and again in 2015. There were many oversized and old native trees surveyed, representing rare gene pool resources.

The assessed windbreaks at Žitný Ostrov territory need woody species and spatial reconstruction. Due to their density, thinning of the trees is necessary in order to enable crown size growth and stability. It is recommended to remove dead and strongly damaged trees and leave some native trees with cavities for supporting bird and insect diversity. Gradually, the above mentioned invasive tree species should be removed and replaced by native species of the genus *Acer*, *Carpinus*, *Cerasus*, *Fraxinus*, *Padus*, *Populus*, *Pyrus*, *Quercus*, *Salix*, *Tilia* and *Ulmus*. Large gaps in windbreaks should be planted by a new tree species, in ecotones by native shrubs.

## Acknowledgements

This contribution was prepared within the grant projects of the Ministry of Education, Science, Research and Sport of the Slovak Republic, project VEGA No. 1/0044/2017 and KEGA No. 001SPU-4/2017.

## References

- Agnoletti, M. [ed.] et al., 2010: *Paesaggi rurali storici*. Roma-Bari, Laterza et Figli, 566 p.
- Baranec, T., Žgančíková, I., Muráňová, K., 2011: Preliminary results of study of the taxonomical and morphological variability of the genus *Prunus* L. in the biocorridors of the agricultural landscape on the territory of SW Slovakia. *Acta Průhoniana*, 99:97–101.
- Benčať, F., Požgaj, J., Mercel, F., Supuka J. et al., 1984: Rozšírenie drevín v záujmovom území Dunajského diela. *Acta Dendrobiologica*, 6/84. Bratislava, VEDA SAV, 164 p.
- Cieszewska, A., Drexler, D., Bihuňová, M., Kalincák, P., Belova, O., Procházka, J., 2010: Eastern Region: Chapter 6. In: *Management of recreation and nature based tourism in European forests*. Berlin Heidelberg, Springer-Verlag, p. 115–139.
- Demková, K., Lipský, Z., 2017: Comparison of the current state of non-forest woody vegetation in two contrasted case study areas in Central Europe. *Moravian Geographical Reports*, 25:24–33.
- Fanneng, H. E., Meijiao, L. I., Schicheng, L. I., Ran, X., 2015: Comparison of changes in land use and land cover in China and the USA over the past 300 years. *Journal of Geography Science*, 25:1045–1057.
- Gemerský, V., 1961: Skúsenosti s ochrannými lesnými pásmi na Žitnom ostrove. *Vedecké práce VÚLH v Banskej Štiavnici*, No. 2, Bratislava, SAV, p. 153–228.
- Hernik, J. (ed.), 2009: *Cultural landscape-across disciplines*. Krakow, Branta, 365 p.
- Insley, H. (ed.), 1988. *Farm Woodland Planning*. London, Forestry Commission, Bulletin, 80, 142 p.
- Jurko, A., 1990: *Ekologické a socioekonomické hodnotenie vegetácie*. Bratislava, VEDA SAV, 200 p.
- Kuczman, G., 2014: Landscape structure and biodiversity of woody plants in the cadastral territory of Kolinany. *Journal of Environmental Protection, Safety, Education and Management*, 2:25–32.
- Kuča, K. (ed.) et al., 2015: *Krajinné památkové zóny*. Praha, NPÚ, 512 p.
- Kupka, J., 2010: *Krajiny kulturní a historické*. Praha, ČVUT, 180 p.
- Kurz, P., Machatschek, M., Iglhauser, B., 2011: *Hecken. Geschichte und Ökologie Anlage. Erhaltung und Nutzung*. Graz, Stuttgart, Leopold Stocker Verlag, 440 p.
- Lampartová, I., Schneider, J., Vyskot, I., Rajnoch, M., Litschmann, T., 2015: Impact of protective shelterbelt microclimate characteristics. *Ekológia (Bratislava)*, 34:101–110.
- Lipský, Z., Demková, K., Skaloš, J., Kukla, P., 2011: The influence of natural conditions on changes in landscape use: a case study of the Lower Podoubraví region (Czech Republic). *Ekológia (Bratislava)*, 30:239–256.
- Morton, A., 1998: *Tree heritage of Britain and Ireland*. Shrewsbury, Swan Hill Press, 208 p.
- Munteanu, C., Kuemmerle, T., Boltziar, M. et al., 2014: Forest and agricultural land changes in the Carpathian region – A meta-analysis of long-term patterns and drivers of change. *Land Use Policy*, 38:685–697.
- Paganová, V., Bakay, L., 2010: Biologické vlastnosti jara-biny oskorušovej *Sorbus aucuparia* L. v meniacich sa podmienkach prostredia. *Nitra, VES SPU*, 92 p.
- Petit, C., Konold, W., Höchtel, F., 2012: Historic terraced vineyards: impressive witness of vernacular architecture. *Landscape History*, 33:5–28.
- Pucherová, Z., 2004: Vývoj využitia krajiny na rozhraní Zobora a Žitavskej pahorkatiny. *Nitra, FPV UKF, Edícia Prírodovedec*, 147 p.
- Reyers, B., O'Farrell, P., Cowling, R. M., Egoh, D., Le Maitre, D. C., Vlok, J. H. J., 2009: Ecosystem Services, Land-Cover Change and Stake holders: Finding of Sustainable Foodhold for Semiarid Biodiversity Hotspot. *Ecology and Society*, 14:38.



- Salašová, A., 2001: Krajinárske zásady obnovy drevinových vegetačných prvkov v krajine In: *Obnova plošné a bodové zelené v krajine*. Brno, MENDELU, p. 18–22.
- Soltner, D., 1991: *L'arbre et la haie*. Angers, Collection Sciences et Techniques Agricoles, 203 p.
- Supuka, J., Verešová, M., Šinka, K., 2011: Development of vineyards landscape structure with regard to historical and cultural values. *Ekológia (Bratislava)*, 30:229–238.
- Supuka, J., Pucherová, Z., 2013: Changes in landscape structure and gene pool importance woody plants in the Žirany cadastral, Slovakia. *Folia Oecologica*, 40:107–116.
- Supuka, J., Šinka, K., Pucherová, Z., Verešová M., Feriancová, L., Bihuňová, M., Kuczman, G., 2013: Landscape structure and biodiversity of woody plants in the agricultural landscape. *Folia Universitatis Agriculturae et Silviculturae Mendelianae Brunensis*, Monographic series, Vol.VI, Issue 9. Brno, Mendel University in Brno, 187 p.
- Špulerová, J., Dobrovodská, M., Lieskovský, J., Bača, A., Halabuk, A., Kohút, T. et al., 2011: Inventory and classification of historical structures of the agricultural landscape in Slovakia. *Ekológia (Bratislava)*, 30:157–170.
- Špulerová, J., Dobrovodská, M., Šatalová, B., Kanka, R., 2017: Small woodlands and trees in traditional agriculture landscapes of Slovakia. *Journal of Landscape Ecology*, 10:1–15.
- Štefunková, D., Dobrovodská, M., Kanka, R., Krnáčová, Z. et al., 2011: Atraktivita malokarpatskej krajiny s dôrazom na historické agrárne štruktúry a biodiverzitu. Bratislava, ÚKE SAV, 200 p.
- Tetera, V., Boček, S., Jongepierová, I., Krška, B., Němec, J., Pešek, R. et al., 2006: *Ovoce Bílých Karpat*. Veselí nad Moravou, KATOS CZ, 310 p.
- Tóth, A., Kuczman, G., Feriancová, L., 2016: Species composition and diversity of non-forest woody vegetation along roads in the agricultural landscape. *Lesnícky časopis - Forestry Journal*, 62:56–66.
- Tutka, J., 2010: Funkcie lesov v poľnohospodárskej krajine. In: *Quo vadis lesníctvo?* Zvolen, NLC, p. 222–233.
- Verešová, M., 2011: Krajinno-architektonické hodnoty vinohradníckych lokalít Západného Slovenska. Dizertačná práca. Nitra, SPU, 95 p.
- Verešová, M., Supuka, J., 2013: Changes of landscape structure and cultural values of vineyard landscape. *Acta Universitatis Agriculturae et Silviculturae Mendelianae Brunensis*, 61:1459–1470.
- Zrníková, K., Jakubec, B., Modranský, J., 2014: Structure of woody plants composition of agricultural landscape structure focusing on the genetic resources of fruit trees in selected cadastral area. *Acta Facultatis Ecologiae*, 30:49–62.

# Weight parameters of body parts in sika deer (*Cervus nippon nippon*) from the Konstantinolázeňsko microregion, the Czech Republic

Vladimír Hanzal<sup>1,2</sup>, Klára Košinová<sup>1\*</sup>, Radek Pokorný<sup>2</sup>, Pawel Janiszewski<sup>3</sup>, Vlastimil Hart<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Czech University of Life Sciences, Faculty of Forestry and Wood Sciences, CZ–165 21 Praha 6, Czech Republic

<sup>2</sup>University of South Bohemia in České Budějovice, Faculty of Agriculture, Studentská 1668, CZ–370 05 České Budějovice, Czech Republic

<sup>3</sup>University of Warmia and Mazury in Olsztyn, Faculty of Animal Bioengineering, ul. M. Oczapowskiego 5/366, 10-719 Olsztyn, Poland

## Abstract

Sika deer is widely spread species, in Czech Republic mostly occurred in West Bohemia. This species is defined as one of the most harmful ungulate game in the forests. For the wildlife population of sika deer in the microregion Konstantinolázeňsko in West Bohemia, total weight after the hunt, weight after expelling organs, weight of the head and distal parts of the limbs, and weight of the internal organs (heart, lung, liver, spleen, kidney) were determined. Correlations between the weights of specific body parts (organs) were evaluated. Ratio between the weight after expelling organs (after gralloch) and the weight after hunt (total weight) was determined. The weight after expelling organs was 74% of the total weight. Moreover, a positive correlation was found between the age and weight of individuals, and between the male age and the weight of the head. Without taking into account age differences, we show that males have a higher body weight than females, a form of sexual dimorphism.

**Key words:** sika deer; venison; dressed body weight; organs weight; gralloch, trophy

Editor: Bohdan Konôpka

## 1. Introduction

In recent years, game damage in the Pilsen and Karlovy Vary regions has reached the highest values in the whole Czech Republic. In 2004 the Karlovy Vary region with more than CZK 9 million of damage, the Pilsen region was the third among the regions 2002 with CZK 7.4 million. The highest damage was found in dominant tree species, i.e. in spruce and pine, damage to other trees is negligible in absolute numbers. In the sum of all the trees, the most frequent damage was the reduction of the growth by bark peeling and browseing. High damage to very young spruce stands is probably due to their relatively high surface area, very low yields of honey-suckles and high deer stays. Deers are simply forced to implement their food needs virtually wherever possible (Dvořák & Čermák 2008).

Game hunting is used as a management technique, for example to control population size and improve population health and quality. It may represent an effective tool for prevention to game damage to forest stands and helps to harmonize interests of both hunting and forestry communities (Konôpka et al. 2015). At the same

time, game meat is gaining popularity for human consumption. Game has historically made a certain share of consumed meat for human being. In recent years, some recovery in game meat consumption has been observed. All edible parts of wild game, not only muscle, but also edible intestines, fat, bones and meat products, are considered to be venison. If we process commonly used parts such as intestines, stomachs, pre-jaws, etc. for further consumption, they will also be considered as game (Adámková & Štochová 2011; Saláková 2014; Winkelmayer 2005).

Sika deer is directly associated with increasing population and can be linked to damaged forest habitat. Sika deer are also a highly adaptable species, which are often hunted for their meat and taken as trophies. The population is increasing, that means also increasing hunting of this species. Sika deer have been documented in the Czech Republic since 1891, when it was brought into Kluk deer-park by Poděbrady (Kokeš 1970; Rakušan 1988).

Introduction of this species into a non-native habitat may change its weight parameters as a part of adaptation to novel environments, such as the type of home range

\*Corresponding author. Klára Košinová, e-mail: [kosinovak@fd.czu.cz](mailto:kosinovak@fd.czu.cz)

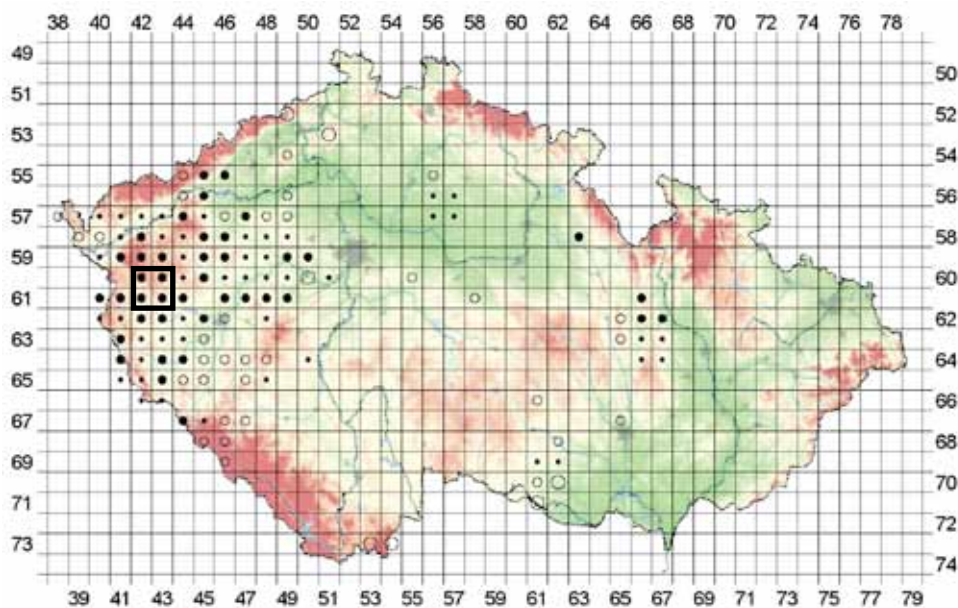
resource availability (e.g. food). Dressed-whole body weight relationships should be site- and season-specific to obtain unbiased estimates of whole body weight because of season, geographic variation in morphology, and nutritional state (Jones et al. 2008). For example, roe deer (*Capreolus capreolus*) in Western Poland shows higher carcass weight in the areas dominated by ploughland compared to areas dominated by forest (Janiszewski et al. 2011).

There are few different studies about sika deer weight in regions across the Czech Republic. In the Bouzovsko region, in the former breeding area of sika deer, the average weight of fawns is 15.3 kg, the average weight of the doe is 26.4 kg, the deer under 4 years weighs on average 39.1 kg, and the average weight of adult deer is 42.7 kg (Babička et al. 1977). Other sources show, that the male fawns weighed 15.1 kg and the female fawns were 13.6 kg. Doe aged 1.5 years weigh 20.9 kg, at the age of 2–4 years weighed 23.8 kg, and deer >4 years weighed 26.4 kg. The average weight of spikes was 28.1 kg, deer older than two years weighed 35.2 kg, three years 39.7 kg, four years 42.3 kg, deer under 8 years 45.1 kg, and deer older than 8 years weighed 50.7 kg (Husák 1986). The weight of the newly born fawn was in the range of 4.7–7 kg and after half a year they ranged from 25–35 kg. The weight of the gralloched deer is about 40–60 kg (Jiřík et al. 1980). The population of sika deer in the district of Pilsen North (weighed after expelling organs, deer without head and doe and fawns with head) shows the average weight of the fawns was 15.7 kg, the average weight of the hind was 23 kg, the four-year-old hinds were 24 kg, and deer older than four-year-olds hind weighed 28 kg. The weight of deer older than eight years is 42.7 kg (Husák et al. 1986).

In the area of Litovel after World War II two sizes and colour differences in sika deer were described. Larger and darker fawns weighed 16–20 kg, hinds 25–30 kg and adult headless deer more than 50 kg. The smaller, lighter character is represented by fawns 13 kg, 25 kg hinds weight, deer weighing 40 kg (Wolf 1999).

In addition, because trophy hunting it is also very important to know the weight of male sika deer head with antlers. Body weight and size, in turn, influenced mineral composition of the antlers of Iberian red deer in Spain (Landete-Castillejos et al. 2007). The weight of the head with antlers is 3.4 kg that is 6.6% of the total weight (Husák 1986). Antler weight of pampas deer (*Ozotoceros bezoarticus*) is increasing with increasing body weight, which is body weight greater in adult males than in males younger than 3 years old (Ungerfeld et al. 2011).

It is also important to understand the difference between the weight of live individual and the weight of individual after expelling organs, i.e. gralloch (Rajský et al. 2013) for the meat production and processing industry. The average weight of the ungralloched fawns from LZ Manětín is 26.4 kg, gralloching weighed 17.5 kg, which is 66.2% of the original weight. The weight after expelling organs was 66.4% of total weight. The weight of the deer was 66.1% versus the ungralloched weight (Husák 1986). Zima (1986) shows a weight loss of 28% in the fawns, the gralloched body has 72% of the original weight, the gralloched hind has a 74% of the weight. The weight of the gralloched body without the head was 65% of the live weight of the fawns regardless of sex, the hind and the deer had 69% of the original weight after being gralloch and without the head. Gralloched hinds



**Fig. 1.** The extension of the sika deer (*Cervus nippon nippon*) in the Czech Republic – full colored circle means higher density of occurrence, outlined circle lower density of occurrence (Anděra & Gaisler 2012). The bold frame indicates the Konstantinůvka microregion.

in the winter season had 70.2% of weight before being gralloched, in the summer season was 64.5% of the total weight of the body. Gralloched deer was found to have a 71.9% share compared to ungralloched in the winter season, with summer hunting being 71.6%. The difference between the summer and winter seasons of the deer is not statistically conclusive and after rounding the two seasons can be averaged to 72% (Feldhamer et al. 1984; Husák 1986; Zima 1989).

Most studies deal with comparing the weight and age (Babička et al. 1977; Husák et al. 1986; Hanák 2015; Heroldová & Zejda 2002; Janiszewski et al. 2009; Jiřík et al. 1980; Mařík 1995; Wolf 1999), sex (e.g. Ježek et al. 2016; Lochman 1993; Hanák 2009) and other parameters but there are no studies about particular weights of the organs. Information about the weight of the organs and each part of sika deer body are still missing and are very important for the game processing.

The body weight of the individual is directly dependent on the food offer. Therefore information about the weight of the individual indicates amount of food needed by the individual animal or the entire population in the given area.

The aim of this study was to document the weight of the game (in particular *Cervus nippon nippon*) before the shooting, after gralloch and after the game has cooled. Moreover we intended to find the basic differences between these variables, the percentage ratio of the weights, the relationship of these weights and the influence of some aspects on the weight of the individual or the weight of the individual's body parts. Weight dependence on the individual's age as well as weight dependence on the sex were expected.

## 2. Material and methods

In order to obtain the data, 63 individuals of sika deer hunted were weighed. All game was hunted in the north-west edge of the West Bohemia, in the Konstantinolaňsko microregion, Czech Republic, at the border of the Plzeň and Karlovy Vary regions (Fig. 1). Sika deer game were hunted on individual hunts and one common hunt in the 2016/17 hunting season.

Two digital scales were used to obtain weight data, both used simultaneously. The first is the KERN HCN 200K500IP suspension weight with a maximum weighing capacity of 200 kg and an accuracy of 50 g, this weight was used to weigh the whole pieces hunted before and after the gralloch, and for weighing game after it has cooled down. Second, the Dahongying ACS-40 stationary weight with a maximum weighing of 40 kg and an accuracy of 5 grams, it was used for the weight of the internal organs, the head, and the distal parts of the limbs. The simultaneous use of both scales was necessary especially for the low accuracy of the weighing instrument, which would not be able to obtain the exact weight of the individual organs while being blocked by the gralloch-

ing game. The used stationary weight was also accurate enough to gain the weight of the smaller organs weight (the kidneys, spleen and hearts often did not weigh more than 0.5 kg), however, the weighing of whole pieces under 40 kg was not able (weighing capacity) due to its small loading area.

Internal organs were weighed even if they were damaged by shooting unless they were almost destroyed. Most commonly weighed damaged lungs and liver, the least damaged were the kidneys. Heart weight was recorded without a crust (a blood clot in the heart cavities) and a pericardium. The lungs were weighted without trachea and esophagus. The renal weight is given simultaneously in both kidneys without a protective fat capsule. The spleen was weighed without fat, and no part of the atrophy was visible. Live weight or total weight is the weight of the game after the hunt, including the head and distal parts of the limbs with only loss of part of the blood caused by the shot. The weight after expelling organs (gralloched) is reported after the gralloch, including the head and distal parts of the limbs. Chilled mass is the weight of the gralloched piece without the head and distal parts of the limbs, weighed 12 – 24 hours after expelling organs. The weight of legs is the weight of all four legs simultaneously. The weight of the head is also reported for the individuals affected of shoot in it, including the antlers, tongue and the last bite (small brunch). The percentage is calculated from live weight, excluding weight loss by cooling, which is calculated from the weight gralloched after deduction of head mass and legs.

The wild game was gralloch as soon as it was hunted and taken to the place of weighing, except for one deer (found the next day), the game was weighed within 2 hours of its hunt.

After arriving at the weighing area, the hunted game were cut across both Achilles' tendons to place a spacer shall. First, the weight was placed on the hinge of the winch, then the spacer shall was tarred. The game was hung upside down behind Achilles tendon, then pulled up with a winch and weighed to obtain a live weight (excluding only blood lost by the hit). First, the neck was cut off ventrally from the chest to the head (cranial), after that, the thoracic cavity was opened by ca. 3/4, thereby releasing the pressure on the diaphragm and releasing the blood trapped in the chest. Subsequently, the abdominal cavity was opened and the pelvic bone was exposed with a longitudinal section from the rectum to the chest cavity. Cutting the abdominal wall was done with caution and with fingers covered by the tip of the knife to the diaphragm. After the diaphragm was reached, it was cut, reaching the chest cavity. The thoracic cavity was opened by a subsequent cut of the last quarter of the chest. Then, the pelvic bone was cut according to the degree of ossification by the knife or the bone saw, thus opening the pelvic cavity. By small cuts and pulling in the cranial direction, the anal aperture, the rectum, the sexual and secretory organs from the pelvic cavity were released,



releasing the kidneys, which were cut off and weighed on a stationary scale, then cut and weighed the spleen.

Subsequently, the remainder of the diaphragm was released from the chest, then cut and the liver was weighed. By cutting off the esophagus, the gastrointestinal tract with the defect from the thoracic cavity was separated. After that, the heart was cut off, and it was stripped of the pericardium and the cruor. Followed by the grip of the lungs and by the cranial thrust and the possible cleavage of the lungs, trachea, esophagus and larynx from the chest and neck of the game. A cut was made behind the larynx to separate it from the head. The lungs were cut off from the trachea and then weighed, and the outcast body, including the head and distal parts of the limbs, was weighed. Then the head was cut off between the occipital joint and the atlas, then the head was weighed. The separation of the distal parts of the limbs was performed in the carpal joint at the forelegs and in the tarsal joint at the pelvic limbs.

The age of the game was judged according to the degree of physical development and at the same time according to the degree of development and teeth wear. The game was divided according to body development and the level of denture development on the fawns up to 1 year of age, spikes and hinds up to two years of age and adult individuals.

The data obtained was processed, statistically evaluated and diagrams prepared in MS Excel. An analysis of the correlation of variables was performed. On the basis of the measured values, point charts with the exponential trend line were created, followed by a box-plot.

### 3. Results

The average weight of deer in this study (Table 1.) was 42.0 kg. This average weight includes not only adult individuals but also juveniles with a lower weight. The average weight after expelling organs (gralloch) was 1.2 kg, that is 74% of the total weight.

We expressed average values partitioned by age class and sex (Table 2). The average weight of the fawn, independent of sex, is 26 kg. Average weight of one year old deer is 45 kg, five year old is 88 kg, suggesting that male deer can gain 43 kg in four years.

Correlations between sika deer weight and all of the variables were also calculated (Table 3). There were several correlations between many of the variables. The strongest (positive) correlation was between total weight, weight after expelling organs, weight of heart and weight of livers. Weight values tend to grow along with increasing age (Fig. 2). There is a statistically significant

**Table 1.** Average weight values (kg) for sika deer regardless of sex or age (N = 63).

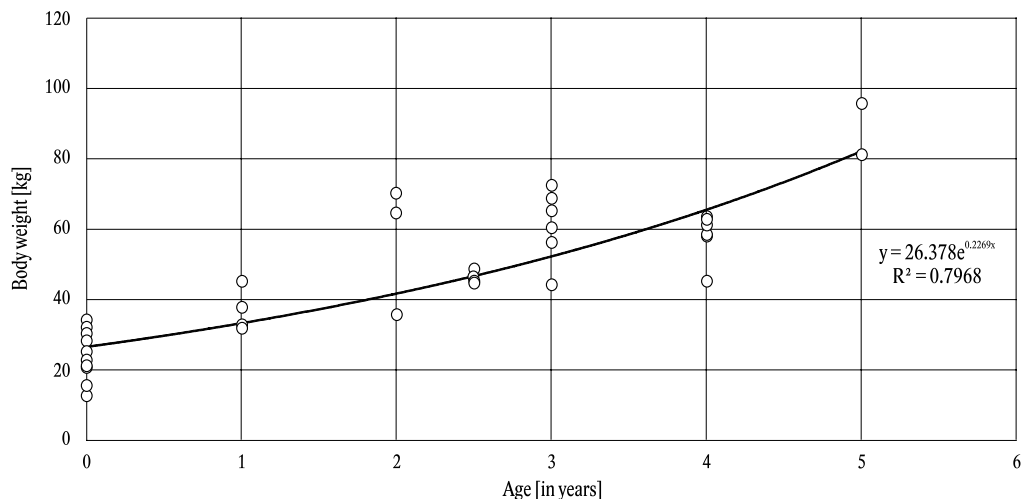
| Type of weight         | Average | Min   | Max   | Standard deviation | Coefficient of variance |
|------------------------|---------|-------|-------|--------------------|-------------------------|
| Whole animal           | 42.02   | 12.50 | 95.50 | 18.32              | 43.61                   |
| After expelling organs | 31.27   | 9.00  | 74.50 | 14.40              | 46.04                   |
| After iceing           | 26.54   | 7.00  | 61.00 | 12.25              | 46.16                   |
| Legs                   | 1.01    | 0.45  | 1.78  | 0.28               | 27.70                   |
| Head                   | 2.13    | 0.86  | 5.35  | 1.03               | 48.53                   |
| Liver                  | 0.95    | 0.30  | 2.39  | 0.57               | 60.51                   |
| Kidneys                | 0.14    | 0.04  | 0.60  | 0.10               | 67.85                   |
| Lungs                  | 0.72    | 0.21  | 1.68  | 0.30               | 41.52                   |
| Spleen                 | 0.19    | 0.02  | 0.80  | 0.13               | 70.05                   |
| Heart                  | 0.32    | 0.12  | 0.64  | 0.11               | 34.35                   |

**Table 2.** Average weight values (kg) for sex and age groups of sika deer.

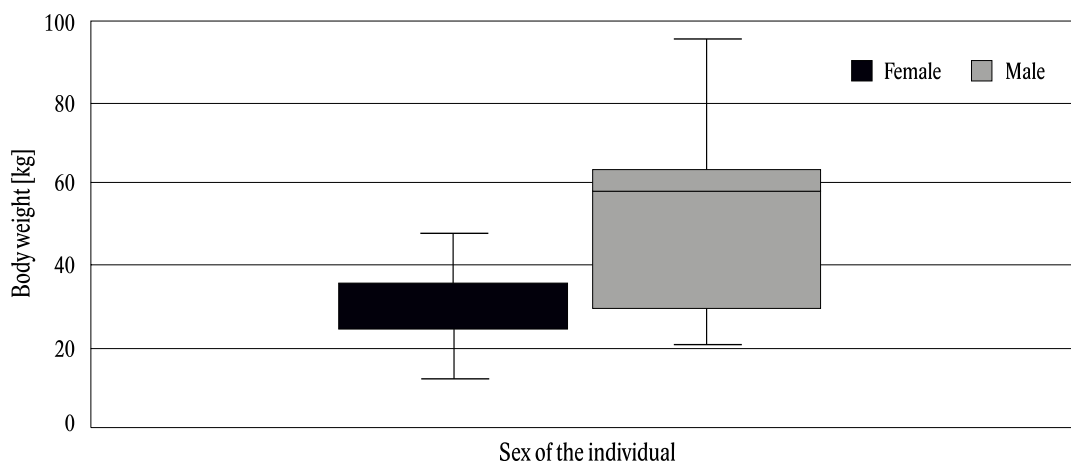
| Sex and age groups | Total weight  |                       | Weight       |         |         |          |            |          |           |      |
|--------------------|---------------|-----------------------|--------------|---------|---------|----------|------------|----------|-----------|------|
|                    | of individual | after expeling organs | after iceing | of legs | of head | of liver | of kidneys | of lungs | of spleen |      |
| Male fawn          | 26.19         | 18.96                 | 15.96        | 0.81    | 1.41    | 0.51     | 0.08       | 0.52     | 0.10      | 0.23 |
| Female fawn        | 26.18         | 19.50                 | 16.65        | 0.78    | 1.32    | 0.48     | 0.12       | 0.57     | 0.15      | 0.25 |
| 1-year-old deer    | 45.00         | 29.00                 | 24.00        | 1.25    | 1.80    | 0.89     | 0.12       | 0.75     | 0.24      | 0.38 |
| 2-year-old deer    | 56.67         | 44.67                 | 39.24        | 1.24    | 1.62    | 1.13     | 0.37       | 0.69     | 0.24      | 0.41 |
| 3-year-old deer    | 60.92         | 44.37                 | 38.42        | 1.28    | 2.72    | 1.36     | 0.18       | 0.94     | 0.16      | 0.42 |
| 4-year-old deer    | 59.42         | 44.49                 | 37.35        | 1.25    | 3.42    | 0.16     | 0.18       | 0.83     | 0.27      | 0.43 |
| 5-year-old deer    | 88.25         | 71.00                 | 58.50        | 1.66    | 5.16    | 2.35     | 0.24       | 1.50     | 0.37      | 0.57 |
| 1-year-old doe     | 33.83         | 24.17                 | 20.50        | 0.87    | 1.68    | 0.66     | 0.12       | 0.67     | 0.17      | 0.25 |
| Older doe          | 46.10         | 34.00                 | 29.00        | 0.96    | 2.08    | 0.72     | 0.12       | 0.92     | 0.20      | 0.34 |

**Table 3.** Correlation of sika deer weights (kg) – gray backgrounds indicate significant correlations at level of p<0.05 (N = 53).

| Variable                       | Averages | Standart deviation | Total weight of the individual | Weight                |              |         |         |          |            |          |           |          |
|--------------------------------|----------|--------------------|--------------------------------|-----------------------|--------------|---------|---------|----------|------------|----------|-----------|----------|
|                                |          |                    |                                | after expeling organs | after iceing | of legs | of head | of liver | of kidneys | of lungs | of spleen | of heart |
| Total weight of the individual | 43.16    | 18.33              | —                              | 0.98                  | 0.98         | 0.89    | 0.86    | 0.95     | 0.39       | 0.68     | 0.46      | 0.91     |
| Weight after expeling organs   | 32.15    | 14.41              | 0.98                           | —                     | 1.00         | 0.89    | 0.86    | 0.93     | 0.41       | 0.67     | 0.45      | 0.91     |
| Weight after iceing            | 27.23    | 12.12              | 0.98                           | 1.00                  | —            | 0.88    | 0.83    | 0.92     | 0.42       | 0.66     | 0.45      | 0.90     |
| Weight of legs                 | 1.04     | 0.27               | 0.89                           | 0.89                  | 0.88         | —       | 0.79    | 0.86     | 0.25       | 0.67     | 0.39      | 0.86     |
| Weight of head                 | 2.21     | 1.08               | 0.86                           | 0.86                  | 0.83         | 0.79    | —       | 0.88     | 0.23       | 0.67     | 0.39      | 0.77     |
| Weight of liver                | 0.97     | 0.59               | 0.95                           | 0.93                  | 0.92         | 0.86    | 0.88    | —        | 0.34       | 0.64     | 0.52      | 0.88     |
| Weight of kidneys              | 0.15     | 0.10               | 0.39                           | 0.41                  | 0.42         | 0.25    | 0.23    | 0.34     | —          | 0.19     | 0.15      | 0.30     |
| Weight of lungs                | 0.72     | 0.29               | 0.68                           | 0.67                  | 0.66         | 0.67    | 0.67    | 0.64     | 0.19       | —        | 0.27      | 0.61     |
| Weight of spleen               | 0.19     | 0.14               | 0.46                           | 0.45                  | 0.45         | 0.39    | 0.39    | 0.52     | 0.15       | 0.27     | —         | 0.48     |
| Weight of heart                | 0.33     | 0.11               | 0.91                           | 0.91                  | 0.90         | 0.86    | 0.77    | 0.88     | 0.30       | 0.61     | 0.48      | —        |



**Fig. 2.** Influence of age on the weight of sika deer (level of significance  $p < 0.05$ ). Individual points mean the weight of each individual at a certain age.



**Fig 3.** Comparison between male and female weights in sika deer. There are weights of the individuals, separated for female and male. The line in the box is median and the average weight is illustrated by the cross in the middle of the box. Maximal and minimal values are illustrated in the segments.

( $r^2 = 0.9046$ ) positive correlation between age and total weight of the individual.

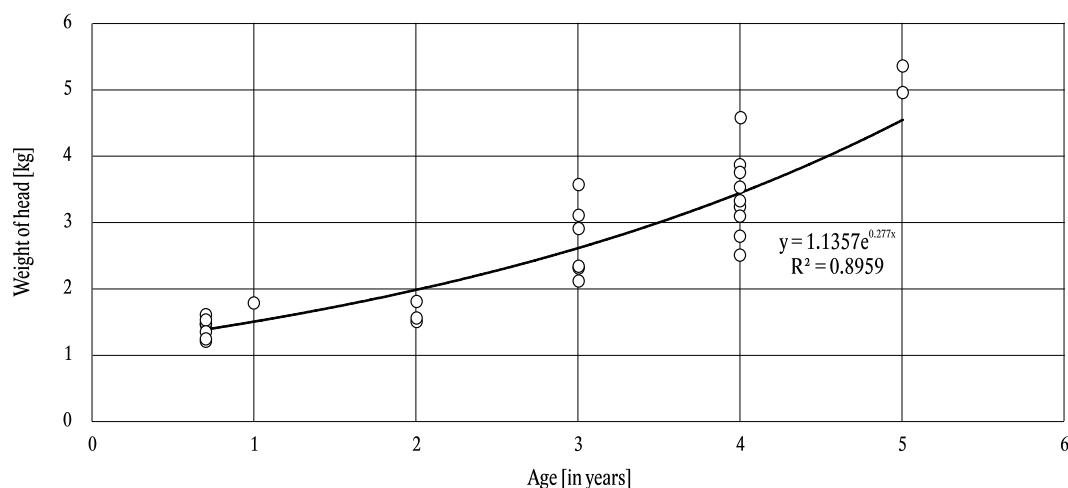
Sex has a significant effect on the weight of individual sika deer (Fig. 3). It is a manifestation of sexual dimorphism, which is evident in this species. Females (does) have an average around 40 kg, males have an average 62 kg, does have around 35% lower weight than males.

Head weight of male sika deer was affected by age (Fig. 4). In the first year of life the antlers have a lower weight, so it affects the total weight of the head. The head weight is increasing with increasing age, every year about 1 kg (Fig. 4). One year old deer had an average head weight around 1.5 kg and in five year old deer the head average head weighted around 5 kg.

#### 4. Discussion

The average live weight for all deer combined was 42 kg, similar to the weight reported by Whitehead (1972) showing an average weight of 48 kg. For both measurements, gender and age differences were not taken into consideration, although in these circumstances the difference of 6 kg can be considered minimal.

The average live weight of fawns, does, and male deer was 26, 46 and 61 kg, respectively. The detected average for the fawns is at the lower edge of the range of weights reported by Jiřík et al. (1980) 25 – 35 kg for half-year olds. However, in this study we measured individuals that were nearly one year of age. The doe and male deer almost coincide with Lochman (1993), giving a live weight of 45 kg



**Fig. 4.** Influence of age male sika deer on head weight (level of significance  $p < 0.05$ ). Individual points mean the weight of the head of each individual at a certain age.

and deer 55 kg. Ohdachi (2010) reports the live weights of deer and deer in the original Japanese homeland of 25–80 kg and 50–130 kg in deer, which corresponds to the data found in the work by Lochman (1993).

The average gralloched weight of fawns found in this study is 19.3 kg, which is a higher weight than Babička et al. (1997) 15.3 kg, Husák et al. (1986) in the district of Pilsen north 15.7 kg, and Bouzovsko 13–15 kg, smaller type of sika deer by Wolf (1999) weighed 13 kg, Uckermann (1972) in the regions Hochrheingebiet 17.6 kg and Arnsberg 15.8 kg and Feldhamer et al (1984) 13.2–15.4 kg. Lower weight can be justified by weighing pieces after iceing possibly without heads and legs, which are often not specified by the authors. In this study, the mean weight was also determined without head and legs and after iceing (16.4 kg), more similar to the stated weights. An alternative possibility of higher weight is the current hunting of older fawns after 15<sup>th</sup> January, which is only allowed after 2014. Similar weights as published in this study by Ueckermann (1972) for Ostangeln fawns 20 kg, Wolf (1999) 16–20 kg and Ježek et al. (2016), weighing 18.2 kg. These weights are almost identical and confirm the weight found in this study.

The gralloched weight of does was 34 kg, which is comparable to Ježek et al. (2016), which reported a weight of 30.6 kg, but does not indicate how game was weighed. It is probable that the weight is in the purchase state, with an average purchase weight of 29 kg. This weight is even more similar to the weights of Ježek et al. (2016) for the Kladská region of 28.8 kg and the Manětín area, where for 5 year olds, the weight was 29 kg. The weight of Manětín sika deer is identical to this study, and the value of Kladská is lower by 0.2 kg. This can be explained by the location of the area tested in this work between Kladská and Manětín, a population with similar living conditions and probable genetic similarity. Another comparable weight of hinds is given by Wolf (1999) in the

Greater Siege of Litovelsko. It lists the weight of the hind 25–30 kg. The other authors Babička (1977), Husák et al., 1986, Feldhamer et al. (1984), Uckermann (1972) report a lower weight of approximately 10 kg compared to the gralloched weight in this study, and it can be argued that the milder winters in recent years, the inclusion of the Dybowski subspecies into the current genotype, and/or better adaptation (already “domesticated” game) to the conditions of the local environment can account for this difference.

The average weight of the deer without age difference was 46.7 kg. This weight is between 40 kg and 50 kg of Litovel’s sika described by Wolf (1999), also corresponds to the weight of 40–60 kg, reported by Jiřík et al. (1980), 35–55 kg, reported by Hanák (2015) and weight 33–78 kg by Heroldová & Zejda (2002), which is similar to the minimum and maximum values found in this work of 28–74.5 kg. The slightly lower values compared to this work indicate for the various age categories Babička et al. (1977) and Husák et al. (1986). Uckermann (1972) and Feldhamer et al. (1984), whose average weights are approximately 10 kg lower, the largest reported differences compared to other studies. This difference of about 20% may be due to different natural conditions or a genetic basis, since Feldhamer et al. (1984) weighed sika from the USA and Feldhamer et al. (1984) weighed German deer.

It is generally know, that the weight of the individual is decreasing in higher age. The average weight of hinds aged 1–2 years is 26 kg, the mean weight at the age of 3–4 years is 30.9 kg, 5–6 years old is 34 kg and in the case of 6 years old or more, the average weight drops to 31.6 kg. The average weight of the hinds without age and area difference is 30.6 kg. (Hanák 2015; Heroldová & Zejda 2002; Husák et al. 1986; Jiřík et al. 1980; Wolf 1999). The Moravian population of sika deer weighed gralloched with the head (Heroldová & Zejda 2002) and determined

weights of hinds ranged from 19 – 50 kg and deer have a total weight 33 – 78 kg. The height growth potential is more observed in the first month of life. Red deer male fawn in Hungary has already at 182 days of age 75.8 kg and female fawn 65.6 kg of live weight (Julianna et al. 2015).

Yokoyama et al. (2001) present that there is correlation between kidney mass and body mass 0.9. Results of this study are not consistent with the result of our study. Correlation between total weight and weight of the kidney is only 0.4 at level of significance  $p < 0.05$ . That mean, that there was not significant dependency between these two variables.

The percentage of weight of the gralloched bodies compared to the total weight was 73.6% for the fawns, 73.8% for the does, 75.4% for the male deer and for 74% for all individuals without age and gender differentiation. The values found here are closest to Zima (1986), 72% for fawns, 74% for does and 75% for deer, the values for does and deer are the same, with a slight difference of 1.6% for fawns. Feldhamer et al. (1984) shows values for hind and deer with a difference of up to 3.5%, for the doe is 70, 2% and for deer 71.9%. Husák (1986) values, 66.2% for fawns, 66.5% for does and 66.1% for deer. The difference in deer is close to 10%, the lower percentage difference is for fawns and does about 7, 3%. A possible reason for such high differences can be the weight gain procedure that Husak et al. (1986) doesn't explain, it is possible that the gralloched bodies are weighted only after iceing, the percentage of which in this work is 5.8% (0.5 – 11.9 kg).

## 5. Conclusion

Our study conducted in the microregion of Konstantinólázeňsko showed that the average total weight of sika deer was 42 kg. The gralloched weight was 74% of the total weight after hunt. There was a correlation between the total weight and age – with the increasing age is also increasing the weight of the individual. Results show sexual dimorphism of sika deer. Females (does) have an average around 40 kg, male (deer) have an average of 62 kg, does have around 35% lower weight than deer. There was also influence of age on the weight of head, which is increasing with higher age. Antlers are progressing throughout life, and in the first years of the life antlers grow faster. Five years old deer have the heaviest head, which also reflects the weight of the antlers. The correlation between the total (live) weight and other weights was significant ( $p < 0.05$ ) for the weight of the liver and heart.

## Acknowledgement

Dr. Michael Scott Painter is acknowledged for English language revision of the manuscript.

## References

- Adámková, V., Štochová, J., 2011: Zvěřina pro zdraví. České Budějovice. Jihočeská univerzita v Českých Budějovicích, 200 p.
- Anděra, M., Gaisler, J., 2012: Savci České republiky: popis, rozšíření, ekologie, ochrana. Praha, Academia, 285 p.
- Babička, C., Drábek, M., Štika, J., Ženožička, J., 1977: Poznatky z chovu jelena siky. Myslivost, 11:270–271.
- Dvořák, J., Čermák, P., 2008: Jelen sika – škody ve vybraných honitbách Plzeňska. Kostelec nad Černými lesy. Lesnická práce, 87:12–14.
- Feldhamer, G. A., Stauffer, J. R., Chapman, J. A., 1984: Body morphology and weight relationships of sika deer in Maryland. Zeitschrift für Säugetierkunde 50:88–106.
- Hanák, J., 2015: Jelen sika japonský: životní způsob, chov, jak dobře vábit a účinně lovit. Praha, Arista Books, 100 p.
- Heroldová, M., Zejda, J., 2002: Body dimensions and coloration of the winter pelage of a Moravian population of sika deer, *Cervus nippon*. Folia Zoologica, 51:253–256.
- Husák, F., Wolf, R., Lochman, J., 1986: Daněk (sika) jelenec. Praha, SZN, 320 p.
- Janiszewski, P., Daszkiewicz, T., Hanzal, V., 2009: Wpływ czynników przyrodniczych i terminu odstrzału na masę tuszy sarny europejskiej (*Capreolus capreolus* L.). Leśne Prace Badawcze, 70:123–130.
- Janiszewski, P., Gugolek, A., Hanzal, V., Bólkowski, D., 2011: Variability of the Carcass Weight of the Red Deer (*Cervus elaphus* L.) in Poland. Polish Journal of Natural Sciences, 26:99–110.
- Ježek, M., Holá, M., Kušta, T., Hart, V., Červěný, J., 2016: Reprodukční charakteristiky samic jelena siky: výzkumné projekty Grantové služby LČR. Praha, Lesy České republiky, s. p., Edice Grantové služby LČR, 43 p.
- Jiřík, K., Anděra, M., Mottl, S., 1980: Atlas zvěře. Praha: SZN, 256 p.
- Jones, R. L., Weckerly, F.W., McCullough, D.R., 2008: Influence of age and sex on dressed-whole body weight relationships in black-tailed deer. California Fish and Game, 94:137–142.
- Julianna, B., János, N., István, N., Miklós, S., András, S., Árpád, B., Péter, H., 2015: Examination and modeling of growth of Central European red deer (*Cervus elaphus hippelaphus*) from birth until 7–8 month of age. Magyar Allatorvosok Lapja, 137:633–640.
- Kokeš, O., 1970: Asijští jeleni na území Československa. Ochrana fauny, 4:158–161.
- Konôpka, J., Kaštier, P., Konôpka, B., 2015: Teoretické východiská a praktické opatrenia na harmonizáciu záujmov lesného hospodárstva a poľovníctva na Slovensku. Lesnícky časopis - Forestry Journal, 61:114–123.



- Landete-Castillejos, T., Garcia, A., Gallego, L., 2007: Body weight, early growth and antler size influence antler bone mineral composition of Iberian Red Deer (*Cervus elaphus hispanicus*) Bone, 40:230–235.
- Lochman, J., Hanzal, V., Liebl, F., 1993: Myslivost v obrazech: zoologie. 2. Praha: ČMMJ, 102 p.
- Mařík, Z., 1995: Kranioetrie a hmotnosti těla jelenců viržinských (*Odocoileus virginianus* Zim.) ulovených v České republice v oblasti Dobříše. Folia venatoria, 25:51–58.
- Ohdachi, S., 2009: The wild mammals of Japan. Kyoto: Shoukadoh Book Sellers, 544 p.
- Rajský, M., Rajský, D., Minárik, M., 2013: Kolko váži? Výpočet živé hmotnosti raticové zveri. Lovu zdar!, 5:44–46.
- Rakušan, C., 1988: Základy myslivosti. Praha, SZN, 412 p.
- Saláková, A., 2014: Hygiena a technologie drůbeže, vajec a zvěřiny. Brno, Veterinární a farmaceutická univerzita, 80 p.
- Ueckermann, E., 1972: Das Sikawild in der Bundesrepublik. Der deutsche Jagër, 29:235–239.
- Ungerfeld, R., Villagrán, M., González-Pensado, S., 2011: Antler weight and body weight relationship in adult and young pampas deer (*Ozotoceros bezoarticus*) males, North-Western Journal of Zoology, 7:208–212.
- Whitehead, G. K., 1972: Deer of the World. Constable, London, 194 p.
- Winkelmayer, R., Lebersorger, P., Zedka, H., 2005: Hygiena zvěřiny. Příručka pro mysliveckou praxi. Institut ekologie zvěře VFU Brno, 168 p.
- Wolf, R., 1999: Historie chovu jelena siky na území České republiky. In: Introdokovaná spárkatá zvěř '99 současná a budoucí chovatelská problematika, sborník referátů, Dobříš 20.–21. srpna 1999. Praha, Česká lesnická společnost, p. 52–56.
- Yokoyama, M., Onuma, M., Suzuki, M., Kaji, K., 2001: Seasonal fluctuations of body condition in northern sika deer on Hokkaido Island, Japan. Acta Theriologica, 46:419–428.
- Zima, J., 1989: Biologie lovné zvěře: vybrané výsledky z řešení kontrolovatelné etapy hlavního úkolu SPVZ č. VI-1-6 Základní předpoklady optimalizace hospodaření s některými druhy lovné zvěře za období 1986–1989. Brno, Ústav systematické a ekologické biologie ČSAV.

## Effect of different management on quality and value production of pure beech stands in Slovakia

Igor Štefančík<sup>1</sup>, Michal Bošela<sup>\*1,2</sup>, Rudolf Petráš<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>National Forest Centre - Forest Research Institute Zvolen, T. G. Masaryka 2175/22, SK – 960 92 Zvolen, Slovak Republic

<sup>2</sup>Technical University in Zvolen, Faculty of Forestry, T. G. Masaryka 24, SK – 960 53 Zvolen, Slovak Republic

### Abstract

Value production is one of the most important information for comparing different management strategies in forestry. Although the value production of forest stands is affected by various factors (stem and assortment quality, stem dimension, stem injury, price of assortments), thinning can be considered as one of the most important one. This paper aims at the evaluation of qualitative and value production in homogeneous beech stands, which were managed by two different thinning types for period of 45 to 55 years: (i) – heavy thinning from below (C grade according to the German forest research institutes released in 1902) and (ii) – Štefančík's free-crown thinning. The third variant was control (iii) – subplot with no interventions. Silvicultural quality characteristics of the lower half of the stem were assessed using a 4-class scale (A – the best quality, D – the worst quality). Assortment structure (commercial quality) was estimated for each stem by an assortment model developed in the past. Nearly 3,000 individual trees aged from 83 to 105 years from 23 subplots established across the Slovakia territory were assessed. The highest volume of the best silvicultural quality of stems (A class) has been reached in forests where Štefančík's free-crown thinning was applied (57 – 85%) while the lowest (22 – 56%) on subplots with no management. The proportion of two best commercial quality assortments (I + II) was highest in forests managed by heavy thinning from below (21 – 29%) and the lowest when no treatment was applied (7 – 19%). The highest value production (expressed in € ha<sup>-1</sup>) was reached in the forests treated by free-crown thinning. Results suggested the overall positive impact of thinning on the increase of value production in beech forests. Particularly, the free-crown thinning focusing on selection of best quality trees should be preferred as it leads, besides its sufficient value production, to a higher vertical differentiation of the beech forests.

**Key words:** pure beech stands; thinnings; stem quality; assortment structure; value production

Editor: Jiří Novák

### 1. Introduction

Qualitative and value production of forest stands are key aspects particularly connected with broad-leaved tree species (oak and beech). Recently, it has become particularly important because the financial evaluation (monetization) of thinnings realized during the whole tending period together with the assessment of mature stands entered a crucial role in assessing the effectiveness of performed tending. Quality of standing stems in forests may be assessed by the quality of stem by external growing traits such as stem straightness, number and size of knots, spiral grain, stem damage etc. (Štefančík 1974) or by the commercial timber quality, assessed by the use of assortment model (Petráš 1992).

Growth and development is affected by the site conditions characteristics (Vacek & Hejcman 2012; Vacek et

al. 2014; Vladovič et al. 2014), stand conditions (Bartoš & Souček 2010; Jullien et al. 2013; Merganič et al. 2013), genetic properties and characteristics (Ducros et al. 1988; Hansen et al. 2003; Gömöry & Paule 2011; Gömöry et al. 2013), including an appropriate provenance (Novotný et al. 2015) and the way of forest management (Štefančík 1974, 2015; Mlinsek & Bakker 1990; Hein et al. 2007; Poleno & Vacek et al. 2009; Vacek et al. 2015).

Many authors found a positive impact of the long-term tending on the timber quality of beech stands (Šebík 1970; Štefančík 1974; Kató & Mülder 1983; Korpel 1988; Mlinsek & Bakker 1990). Particularly, selective thinnings (Šebík & Polák 1990; Štefančík et al. 1996; Cameron 2002) by the target trees method (Skovsgaard et al. 2006; Hein et al. 2007; Štefančík & Bošela 2014; Štefančík 2015) are the most appropriate. In addition,

\*Corresponding author. Michal Bošela, e-mail: bosela@nlcsk.org

thinning increases the quality of beech timber (Keller et al. 1976; Ferrand 1982; Cameron 2002; Poljanec & Kadunc 2013).

Value production of beech stands is significantly reduced by a false heart and/or by wood rot (Knoke & Wenderoth 2001; Knoke 2003; Krpan et al. 2006), or by the occurrence of knots on the stem (Richter 2007). Despite the extensive research on beech stands from various aspects, there is a lack of knowledge about the value production of beech in pure (Sedmák & Hladík 2002; Utschig & Küsters 2003) or mixed stands (Petráš et al. 2015). In particular, it is questionable whether different management can significantly affect (increase) value production of beech stands in comparison to stands without any interventions.

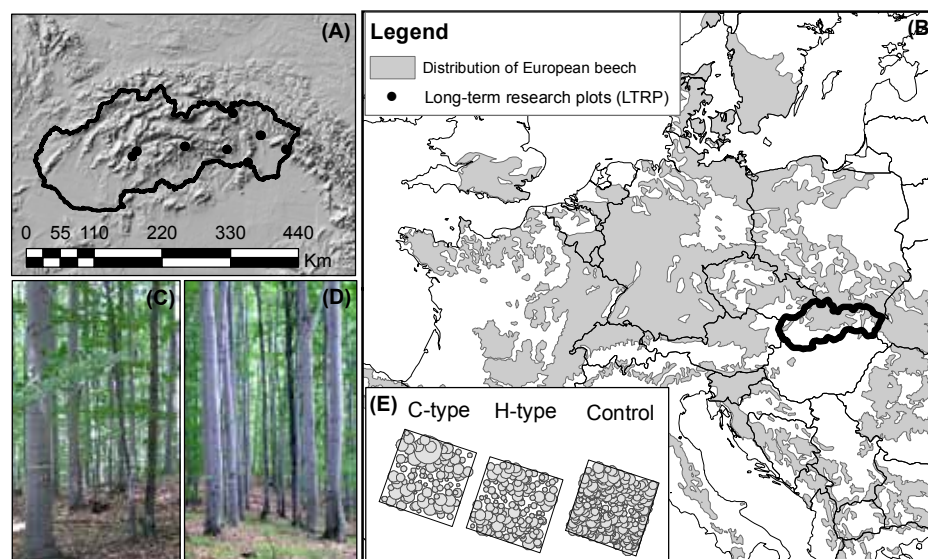
Presented study focuses on the assessment of stem quality and value of assortments in pure beech stands that were exposed to two different thinning methods for the last 45 – 55 years. The hypothesis that stands with

different thinning methods will produce different value production expressed by only last assessment of stem quality and assortment value and that subplots with no interventions are expected with the lowest value production was tested.

## 2. Materials and methods

### 2.1. Establishment of long-term research plots

Twenty three subplots at seven localities (plots) across Slovakia were established by the Prof. Dr. Ladislav Štefančík during 1959–1969 period in homogeneous, even-aged naturally regenerated beech forests in Slovakia (Fig. 1). At the time of their establishment, the forests were in a growth stage from small pole to pole timber. Table 1 shows basic site characteristics of the plots.



**Fig. 1** (a) The distribution of the study localities across the Western Carpathians (Slovakia) used in this study, (b) the present distribution of European beech (source: Euforgen, 2015) with highlighted boarder of Slovakia, (c) beech forest in 2015 after applying the free crown thinning (thinning from above aimed at supporting the selected best-quality trees – all suppressed trees are subject to natural mortality only), (d) beech forest in 2015 after applying the heavy thinning from below (all suppressed and sub-dominant trees were removed), and (e) an example of placement of the research subplots in a locality including the spatial distribution of trees measured in 2015 – the circle size represents crown projection area.

**Table 1.** Site characteristics for the 23 permanent research plots in European beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) included in the analysis.

| Plot/subplot     | Number of inventory cycles | First-last measurement | Age span [years] | Geographic position |            | Elevation a. s. l. [m] | Mean annual temperature [°C] | Mean annual precipitation [mm] | Soil unit              |
|------------------|----------------------------|------------------------|------------------|---------------------|------------|------------------------|------------------------------|--------------------------------|------------------------|
|                  |                            |                        |                  | E-longitude         | N-latitude |                        |                              |                                |                        |
| Jalna/C,H,0      | 12                         | 1959–2012              | 36–89            | 48.55               | 18.95      | 610                    | 6.2                          | 800                            | Eutric Cambisol        |
| Konus/C,H,0      | 12                         | 1961–2014              | 30–83            | 48.78               | 22.30      | 510                    | 6.5                          | 900                            | Eutric Cambisol        |
| Kalsa/C,H,0      | 12                         | 1961–2014              | 37–90            | 48.58               | 21.48      | 520                    | 6.0                          | 790                            | Stagni-Eutric Cambisol |
| Kalsa/H2         | 10                         | 1969–2014              | 45–90            | 48.98               | 21.74      | 250                    | 7.9                          | 660                            | Stagni-Eutric Cambisol |
| Zalobin/C,H,0    | 12                         | 1962–2015              | 39–92            | 48.74               | 21.01      | 700                    | 6.7                          | 780                            | Haplic Cambisol        |
| Zlata Idka/C,H,0 | 12                         | 1960–2013              | 40–93            | 48.76               | 20.09      | 560                    | 5.5                          | 918                            | (Dystric)              |
| Ciganka/C,H,H2,0 | 10                         | 1967–2012              | 60–105           | 49.28               | 21.10      | 550                    | 5.5                          | 690                            | Haplic Cambisol        |
| Lukov/H,0        | 11                         | 1962–2011              | 45–94            | 49.28               | 21.10      | 550                    | 5.5                          | 690                            | (Dystric)              |
| Lukov/C          | 10                         | 1966–2011              | 49–94            |                     |            |                        |                              |                                |                        |

Comment: C – heavy thinning from below (C grade according to German forestry research institutes from 1902); H – the free crown thinning according to Štefančík (1984) principles, thinning interval of 4 or 5 years; H2 – the free crown thinning according to Štefančík (1984) principles, thinning interval of 10 years; 0 – control plot (no thinning).

No systematic interventions were performed in the forests until the establishment of the plots. If there was some intervention, it was of the slight intensity only removing the suppressed trees – so-called wandering-selective felling (Štefančík 1974).

Each plot comprised of 3 to 5 subplots (mostly three), which were arranged next to each other (along the contour line), and separated from each other by a 15 m wide (the minimum width) isolation belt. The area of each subplot was 0.25 ha (50 × 50 m), with the exception for the plot Zalobin with the size of 0.20 ha (40 × 50 m). A 10 m wide transect, where heights of the all trees were measured, was established and evidenced through the center of each subplot.

All living trees with the diameter DBH ≥ 3.6 cm and trees which reached this threshold during the measurement period were fixed and numbered. One subplot (specified as 0) in each plot (locality) was left unmanaged as a control plot.

## 2.2. Field works

The following thinning types were applied on the subplots within each plot:

- a) Heavy thinning from below (C grade according to the German forest research institutes released in 1902) (here recognized as C). All suppressed trees without tendency to support the target trees have been removed. The thinning intensity on this subplots ranged from 37 to 46% out of basal area total production. Thinning interval was the same as for subplot H.
- a) The free crown thinning (thinning from above) with a 5-year (marked as H) or 10-year thinning interval (marked as H2) using the principles defined by Štefančík (1974, 1984). This thinning method focuses on identifying and supporting the best quality trees growing in the crown level of the stand (target trees). Thinning intensity for this method of thinning ranged from 35% to 48% out of basal area production. At first, 4-year thinning interval was used between the first and second and/or second and third intervention on all subplots (except for subplots H2). Later, it was a 5-year interval on the all subplots or 10-year interval (on subplots H2 only).

In addition to standard biometric measurements, trees were classified into the 1 – 5 tree vertical classes (using Kraft classification system). The quality traits of the bottom half of stem were assessed according to the following classification:

- A – Straight, non-twisted stem, centric, without shape deformations and knots; suitable for sliced veneer production;
- B – Stem with minor technical defects with solid and loose knots up to 4 cm (1 – 2 pieces per meter);
- C – Stem with large technical defects, greater curvature, and twisted growth up to 4%, solid knots without limita-

tion; suitable especially for lower quality saw logs or pulp; D – Stem inferior to the class C, with the extensive rot, and only suitable as fuelwood.

## 2.3. Data processing

The analysis includes only the last inventory on the subplots in order to investigate the long-term effect (45 to 55 years) of the different thinning types on qualitative and value timber production. In total, 2,973 trees were assessed. First, the shares of A – D stem quality classes were defined for each subplot. Assortment structure was estimated by national assortment model (Petráš 1992), which gives the assortments percentage in dependence on the tree diameter (DBH), the stem quality, the stem damage and the stand age. Stem damage was not assessed. We assumed no stem injuries. Therefore the results are not real only theoretical.

Individual assortments represent log classes based on log quality and its diameter. Quality classes of logs are mainly characterized by their intended purpose:

- I sliced veneers, special sporting and technical goods,
- II peeled veneers, sporting goods,
- III (A, B) saw logs (IIIA – better quality, IIIB – worse quality),
- V pulpwood; chemical and mechanical processing for pulpwood and agglomerated boards production,
- VI fuelwood.

I – IIIB classes defined in the assortment tables model are also separated into 1 – 6+ diameter classes. (1 – 16 to 19 cm; 2 – 20 to 29 cm; 3 – 30 to 39 cm; 4 – 40 to 49 cm; 5 – 50 to 59 cm; 6+ more than 60 cm).

The estimated assortment value was calculated for each tree as the product of assortments volume and timber prices by log quality and diameter classes. Timber prices were taken from the state enterprise Forests of the Slovak Republic, Assortment price list published in 2013 (Table 2).

**Table 2.** Assortments prices (€ m<sup>-3</sup>) by log quality and diameter classes.

| Diameter class | Quality class |       |      |      |      |      |
|----------------|---------------|-------|------|------|------|------|
|                | I             | II    | IIIA | IIIB | V    | VI   |
| 1              |               |       | 51.5 | 50.5 |      |      |
| 2              |               | 54.0  | 52.5 | 51.5 |      |      |
| 3              |               | 103.0 | 69.5 | 57.5 | 43.0 | 44.0 |
| 4              | 201.0         | 108.0 | 71.5 | 59.5 |      |      |
| 5              | 231.0         | 113.0 | 71.5 | 59.5 |      |      |
| 6+             | 271.0         | 113.0 | 71.5 | 59.5 |      |      |

Comment: Assortment prices for V and VI quality classes are the same for all diameter classes.

## 2.4. Statistical analyses

ANOVA was applied to test for the effects of thinning type on the proportion of the highest-quality stems, proportion of I+II and IIIA quality assortments as well as to test the effect on financial return per hectare and per cubic meter. The Bonferroni correction was used to counteract the problem of multiple comparisons. Simple linear and polynomial regression was used to investigate the effects of mean stand diameter, as a characteristic representing forest development, on the proportion of the highest-quality stems and potential financial return under different thinning type.

## 3. Results

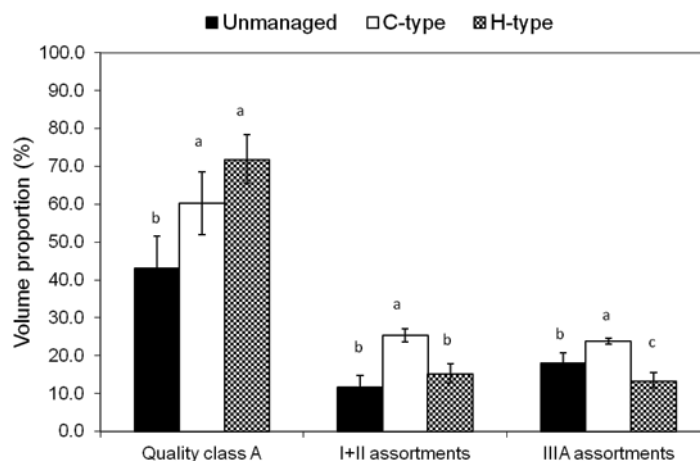
### 3.1. Stem quality

The highest proportion of the best A quality stems (Fig. 2) was reached when applying the free crown thinning (H).

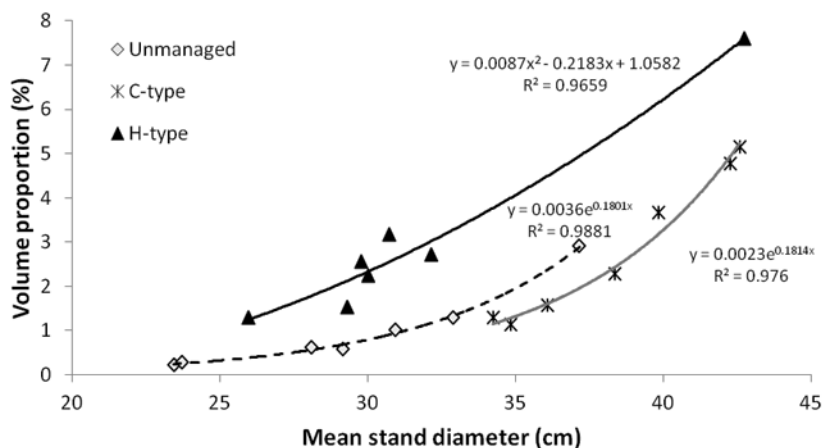
It varied from 59 to 85%. On the subplots with heavy thinning from below (C), the proportion of the best quality stems varied in the range of 48–82%. However, the proportion was not found to be significantly different from the previous. The lowest proportion of the best quality stems (22–56%) was observed in the unmanaged forests (0) (Štefančík 2015).

### 3.2. Assortment structure

The highest proportion (21–28%) of the best quality assortments (I+II) was found on the subplots where the thinning from below was applied. The lowest proportion of such quality trees (6–19%) was observed on control subplots as well as in forests managed by free-crown thinning (4–22%). Similarly, the highest proportion of IIIA quality stems was reached in forests treated by heavy thinning from below. On the contrary, the free-crown thinning provided the lowest proportion of such stems.



**Fig. 2.** Volume proportion of the highest quality (A) stems and I + II and IIIA assortments by the thinning types. Legend: C – type – subplot with heavy thinning from below (C – type according to the German forest research institutes released in 1902), H – type – subplot with free crown thinning (thinning from above) defined by Štefančík (1974), Unmanaged – control subplot (without interventions). Note: Different letters mean statistically significant difference ( $p < 0.05$ ) within the quality categories.



**Fig. 3.** Dependence of the volume proportion of best quality assortments (Class I) on the mean stand diameter ( $d_g$ ).

In addition to stem quality, an assortment dimension (diameter) is another important feature for assigning the stems into certain assortment classes. The relationship between proportion of the best quality assortments (I. class) and the mean stand diameter largely differed between the thinning types (Fig. 3). On all subplots a modest increase of the most valuable assortments has been observed with increasing stem mean diameter. Best quality assortments was higher by 4 – 5% under the free crown thinning than on subplots with no tending at the same mean diameter ( $d_g$ ).

### 3.3. Value production

Beech stands under free-crown thinning reached the highest value production (per hectare) (Fig. 4a, b). Stands managed by heavy thinning from below reached less and the control subplots least value production. The value is approximate as the value production has been

calculated for undamaged subplots, so the real value was lower.

Mean stand diameter (Fig. 5) influences the stand value production. Differences are evident above the mean diameter of 30 cm. Stands with heavy thinning from below had in five (out of seven) plots the maximum diameters and also the highest value production (expressed by € ha<sup>-1</sup>). Control subplots and subplots with free crown thinning showed approximately the same values.

Subplots with free crown thinning had the highest value production (Fig. 4b), when standardized to the value per one cubic meter (ranging from 71 to 82 € m<sup>-3</sup>). Subplots with heavy thinning from below reached 68 – 76 € m<sup>-3</sup>. The lowest value production (58 – 71 € m<sup>-3</sup>) was found on the control subplots (without tending). Relationship between the value production (in € m<sup>-3</sup>) and the mean diameter ( $d_g$ ) highlighted the same trend of increasing production with the increase of mean diameter regardless to the applied thinning type (Fig. 6).

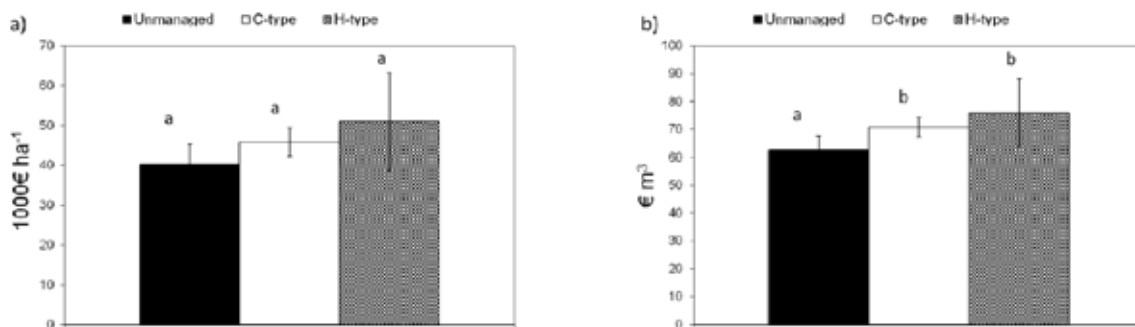


Fig. 4. Value production (a) in thousands € per hectare and (b) € per m<sup>3</sup> in different thinning types. Different letters mean statistically significant difference ( $p < 0.05$ ).

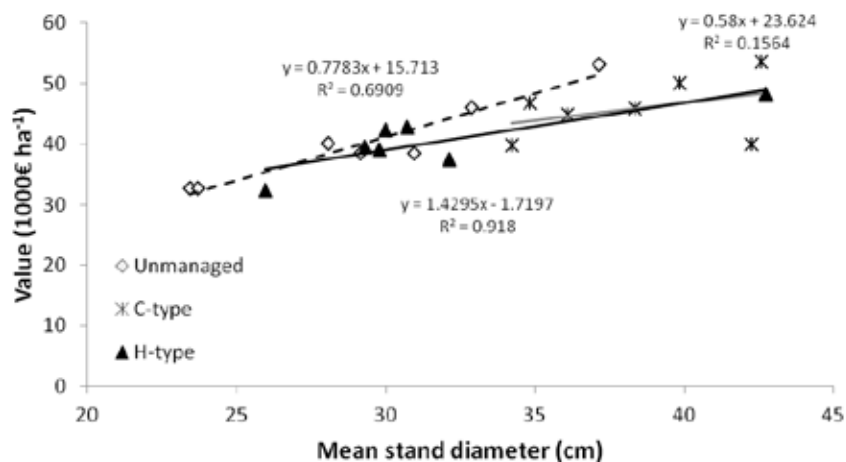


Fig. 5. Dependence of the value production (thousands € ha<sup>-1</sup>) on the mean stand diameter on subplots with a different management.



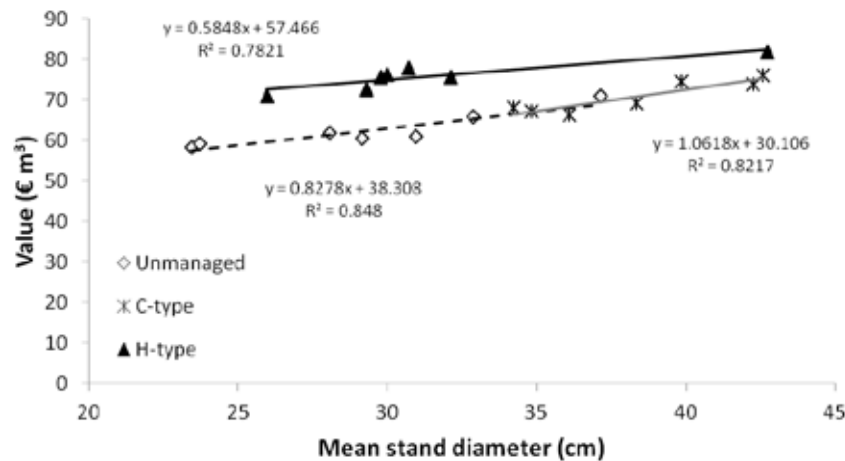


Fig. 6. Dependence of the value production ( $\text{€ m}^{-3}$ ) on mean stand diameter ( $d_g$ ) on subplots with different management.

#### 4. Discussion

The highest percentage of best quality stems (class A) was reached by the free crown thinning. This thinning method is focused exclusively on individual cultivation of the highest quality trees (promising; target trees), which are selected in the stand's crown and dominant level (Štefančík 1984). These are typically the thickest trees ( $d_{1,3} \geq 45$  cm), which is necessary (in addition to qualitative characteristics) to meet the criteria of the most valuable assortments (class I). On the other hand, the highest proportion of the best quality assortments (class I + II) by volume was reached at heavy thinning from below. Contrary to thinning from above grows a stand as a whole by removing all suppressed trees and does not intervene into the crown level. Therefore it does not distinguish between individuals for their stem quality. Despite the fact that subplots with thinning from below are always characterized by highest mean diameter (Assmann 1968; Šebík & Polák 1990; Štefančík 2015) in comparison with other methods of thinning, the proportion of the best quality stem was the highest at free crown thinning. Thus, this suggest that not only dimension of stems is important (over 45 cm dbh) for assorting, but also their quality characteristics and stem damage in particular. We did not directly assess the damage separately for each stem in this study, but we considered stem damage when assessing the stem quality class. However, the assortment models used in our study (Petráš & Nociar 1991) were also based (in addition to the stem diameter and quality) on dependence on the stem damage and age. Therefore detected assortment structure can not be considered absolute, but for orientation. Presented research supports the finding, when the lowest proportion of best quality stems and assortments was found on plot Lukov (poor genetic quality of the stand) and Kalsa. It was confirmed by negative phenotypic traits (stem with deformation, greater curvature, twisted growth). As was already revealed in the past studies, a beech bark necrotic

disease significantly caused later trunk rot (Štefančík & Leontovych 1966; Štefančík 1974) occurred on this plot and also in Konus and Jalna. On these plot, the proportion of the highest quality stems (A + B) was even higher on control subplots (without interventions) than on the subplot with free crown thinning (Štefančík 2015). This is in accordance with the other studies (Štefančík 1974; Cicák & Mihál 2001; Cicák et al. 2003) that showed a higher rate of necrosis in managed forest stands in comparison to stands without interventions. Whereas, last interventions in the stands with thinning from below were minimal, necrosis was not reflected here. On the contrary, interventions in the stands managed by the free-crown thinning were performed even in the higher age (Štefančík 2015) to achieve the highest value increment (Assmann 1968). The occurrence of necrosis was also related to the social status of a tree, as the frequency increased with decreasing vertical position of the individuals in the stand level (Cicák & Mihál 2002). Such approach gives those stands an advantage, because the part of the stand is removed during the first interventions, contrary to the stands with free crown thinning, where the suppressed trees frequently occur at the higher age (Štefančík 2015).

Big proportion of the best quality stems, found in stands with performed free crown thinning is related to the highest number of target trees on these subplots (Štefančík 2015). At the same time, the merchantable volume was almost always higher in stands treated by heavy thinning from below and control subplots compared to the Štefančík's free crown thinning. This observation thus supports the suggestion to focus on the qualitative aspects of the thinning in beech stands (Kató & Müller 1983; Poljanec & Kadunc 2013; Štefančík & Bošela 2014) and/or on a certain number of the top quality trees (Štefančík 1974; Hein et al. 2007). In our research it was ranged from 44 to 164 individuals per hectare on subplots with heavy thinning from below and/or 68 to 184 trees on subplots with free crown thinning. However, when

growing “mass quality”, i.e. the whole stand without the focus on the highest quality (target) individuals, better results were reached in the stands managed by heavy thinning from below (Štefančík 2015), as confirmed in our study (Fig. 2).

Our results are also consistent with those provided by Hladík & Sedmák (1996) who confirmed that the best quality was reached in the stands treated by thinning from above (reached the highest share of class A) while the lowest quality was found on control plots. The authors assumed that the value production in the stand with crown level interventions would be higher than in the stands under thinning from below. Similarly, Hein et al. (2007) showed in a 35-year experiment that the net present value of timber production in the stands with applied selection thinning was higher in comparison to the Assmann’s optimal stand basal area regime. When expressed in € m<sup>-3</sup>, our results support these findings.

The study by Poljanec & Kadunc (2013) showed that the quality of beech trees in Slovenia was highest at the DBH of 50 – 55 cm which is consistent with our findings, where the highest quality was observed at DBH of 41 – 50 cm. It was also suggested that beech timber value was positively affected by high harvesting intensity (Poljanec & Kadunc 2013), because managed stands had always better stem quality. Such conclusion confirm the importance of thinning in achieving higher quality of beech stands (Kató & Mülder 1983; Korpel 1988; Šebík & Polák 1990; Štefančík et al. 1996). In order to improve the quality structure of beech stands, beech would have to be grown in beech-dominated stands or clusters, and thinned at the “correct time” (Poljanec & Kadunc 2013). Based on our experience it should be at age of 20 to 40 years in dependence on site and stand conditions.

The more valuable assortments forester manages to grow, the higher is the value production (converting timber into money). This corresponded with our observation that the highest proportion of the best quality assortments was in the forest stands managed by the free-crown thinning. At the same time, there was with the highest value production. When comparing individual localities (sites), the highest production value was found in the Zalobin, which was again related to the highest production potential of this site (largest stem diameter dimensions) compared to other plots (Bošela et al. 2016; Štefančík 2015). It should be noted that the real value production would be lower, because we did not consider damage of the assessed trees (Petráš & Nociar 1991).

It should be highlighted that the determined production value is rather “theoretical” or “gross” because it does not take into account costs or yield during the whole observation period (over 50 years). Costs for interventions would be the highest in stands with free-crown thinning, where 10 – 12 interventions were performed and the lowest (zero) on the control subplots. On the other hand, yields during the tending period were zero on the control subplot. We can speak about the “pure” produc-

tion value after the cost-benefit analysis throughout the whole research period.

## 5. Conclusion

A comparison of the production value of beech stands aged between 83 – 105 years and managed in two different ways for a long-term (over 50 years) demonstrated the positive impact of tending on the stand quality. Tending of beech stands should focus on selective quality, i.e. an optimal number of individuals of the highest quality (target trees). Growing of “mass quality” through the tending focused on the whole stand, not on individual trees could lead to a higher value production, provided that there were no damage. On the other hand, such method of thinning is less favourable for the production of the most valuable assortments. After 50 years of observations, the value production was highest (€ m<sup>-3</sup>) in stands managed by Štefančík’s free-crown thinning in comparison with heavy thinning from below and control subplots (without tending).

## Acknowledgement

We thank two anonymous reviewers for valuable comments and suggestions. The study was supported by the Slovak Research and Development Agency under Contract No. APVV-0262-11, No. APVV-15-0032 and No. APVV-15-0265, as well as by the project “Research and development for innovation and support of competitiveness of forestry sector – VIPLES” funded by Ministry of Agriculture and Rural Development of the Slovak Republic.

## References

- Assmann, E., 1968: *Náuka o výnose lesa*. Bratislava, Príroda, 488 p.
- Bartoš, J., Souček, J., 2010: Vliv hektarového počtu na kvalitu tyčkovin buku lesního. *Zprávy lesnického výzkumu*, 55:33–37.
- Bošela, M., Štefančík, I., Petráš, R., Vacek, S., 2016: The effects of climate warming on the growth of European beech forests depend critically on thinning strategy and site productivity. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology*, 222:21–31.
- Cameron, A. D., 2002: Importance of early selective thinning in the development of long-term stand stability and improved log quality: a review. *Forestry*, 75: 25–35.
- Cicák, A., Mihál, I., 2001: T-disease – a little investigated phenomenon of the beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) necrotic damage. *Journal of Forest Science*, 47: 38–41.
- Cicák, A., Mihál, I., 2002: Relationship of necrotic disease of beech trunks to the sociological position of trees in the stand. *Journal of Forest Science*, 48:225–229.

- Cicák, A., Mihál, I., Štefančík, I., 2003. Development of necrotic disease and health condition of trees of selective quality in a systematically tended beech pole-stage stand. *Journal of Forest Science*, 49:11–18.
- Ducros, E. T., Thiebaut, B., Duval, H., 1988: Variability in beech – budding, height growth and tree form. *Annales des Sciences Forestieres*, 45:383–398.
- Ferrand, J. C., 1982: Variabilité en forêt des contraintes de croissance du hêtre (*Fagus sylvatica* L.). *Annals of Forest Science*, 39:187–218.
- Gömöry, D., Paule, L., 2011: Trade-off between height growth and spring flushing in common beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.). *Annals of Forest Science*, 68:975–984.
- Gömöry, D., Comps, B., Paule, L., von Wühlisch, G., 2013: Allozyme and phenotypic variation in beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.): are there any links? *Plant Biosystems*, 147:265–271.
- Hansen, J. K., Jorgensen, B. B., Stoltze, P., 2003: Variation of quality and predicted economic returns between European beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) provenances. *Silvae Genetica*, 52:185–197.
- Hein, S., Lenk, E., Klädtke, J., Kohnle, U., 2007: Effect of crop tree selective thinning on beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) *Allgemeine Forst- und Jagdzeitung*, 178:8–20.
- Hladík, M., Sedmák, R., 1996: Vplyv výchovných zásahov na štruktúru a množstvo produkcie bukového porastu (na príklade trvalej výskumnej plochy Poruba). *Acta Facultatis Forestalis Zvolene*, 38:127–149.
- Jullien, D., Widmann, R., Loup, C., Thibaut, B., 2013: Relationship between tree morphology and growth stress in mature European beech stands. *Annals of Forest Science*, 70:133–142.
- Kató, F., Mülder, D., 1983: Qualitative Gruppendurchforstung der Buche. *Allgemeine Forst- und Jagdzeitung*, 154:139–145.
- Keller, R., Le Tacon, F., Timbal, J., 1976: La densité du bois de hêtre dans le nord-est de la France. Influence des caractéristiques du milieu et du type de sylviculture. *Annals of Forest Science*, 33:1–17.
- Knoke, T., 2003: Predicting red heartwood formation in beech trees (*Fagus sylvatica* L.). *Ecological Modelling*, 169:295–312.
- Knoke, T., Wenderoth, S. S., 2001: Ein Ansatz zur Beschreibung von Wahrscheinlichkeit und Ausmaß der Farbkernbildung bei Buche (*Fagus sylvatica* L.). *Forstwissenschaftliches Centralblatt*, 120:154–172.
- Korpeľ, Š., 1988: Dynamika rastu a vývoja bukových porastov vo fáze mladiny až žrdoviny vplyvom pestovnej techniky. *Acta Facultatis Forestalis Zvolene*, 30:9–38.
- Krpan, A. P. B., Prka, M., Zečić, Z., 2006: Phenomenon and characteristic of false heartwood in the beech thinnings and regenerative fellings in management unit “Bjelovarska bilogora”. *Glasnik za Šumarske Pokuse*, 5:529–542.
- Merganič, J., Marušák, R., Merganičová, K., Stolariková, R., Tipmann, L., 2013: Relation between selected indicators of forest stand diversity and quality of timber production in young stands aged up to 40 years. *Journal of Forest Science*, 59:503–513.
- Mlinšek, D., Bakker, A., 1990: Jugendwachstum und Holzqualität bei der Buche. *Forstwissenschaftliches Centralblatt*, 109:242–248.
- Novotný, P., Frýdl, J., Čáp, J., 2015: Zhodnocení kvalitativních parametrů buku lesního (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) na sedmi provenienčních výzkumných plochách ve věku 25 let. *Zprávy lesnického výzkumu*, 60:14–23.
- Petráš, R., Nociar, V., 1991: Sortimentáčné tabuľky hlavných drevín. Bratislava, Veda, 308 p.
- Petráš, R., 1992: Mathematisches Modell der Sortimentstafeln für Hauptbaumarten. *Lesnícky časopis*, 38:323–332.
- Petráš, R., Mecko, J., Bošela, M., 2015: Kvalita dreva a jeho hodnota v zmiešaných verzus rovnorodých porastoch smreka, jedle a buka. In: Houšková, K., Černý, J. (eds.): *Proceedings of Central European Silviculture*. Brno, Mendelova univerzita, p. 119–130.
- Poleno, Z., Vacek, S. et al., 2009: Pěstování lesů III. Praktické postupy pěstování lesů. Kostelec n. Č. lesy, Lesnická práce, 952 p.
- Poljanec, A., Kadunc, A., 2013: Quality and timber value of European beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) trees in the Karavanke region. *Croatian Journal of Forest Engineering*, 34:151–165.
- Richter, Ch., 2007: Holzmerkmale- Beschreibung der Merkmale – Ursachen – Vermeidung Auswirkungen auf die Verwendung des Holzes – Technologische Anpassung. DRW-Verlag Weinbrenner GmbH & Co. Kg, Leinfelden-Echterdingen, 82 p.
- Sedmák, R., Hladík, M., 2002: Vplyv rozličného spôsobu výchovy na hodnotovú produkciu predrubného bukového porastu. *Acta Facultatis Forestalis*, 44:171–186.
- Skovsgaard, J. P., Nordfjell, T., Sørensen, I. H., 2006: Precommercial thinning of beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.): early effects of stump height on growth and natural pruning of potential crop trees. *Scandinavian Journal of Forest Research*, 21:380–387.
- Šebík, L., 1970: Kvalita a vplyv prvých úrovňových prebierok na kvalitu predrubných bukových porastov. *Zborník vedeckých prác LF VŠLD vo Zvolene*, 12:31–50.
- Šebík, L., Polák, L., 1990: Náuka o produkcii dreva. Bratislava, Príroda, 322 p.
- Štefančík, I., 2015: Rast, štruktúra a produkcia bukových porastov s rozdielnym režimom výchovy. *Zvolene, NLC*, 148 p.
- Štefančík, I., Bošela, M., 2014: An influence of different thinning methods on qualitative wood production of European beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) on two eutrophic sites in the Western Carpathians. *Journal of Forest Science*, 60:406–416.

- Štefančík, L., 1974: Prebierky bukových žrdovín. Lesnícke štúdie č. 18, Bratislava, Príroda, 141 p.
- Štefančík, L., 1984: Freie Hochdurchforstung in ungepflegten Buchenstangenhölzern. Allgemeine Forstzeitung, 95:106–110.
- Štefančík, L., Leontovych, R., 1966: O nekróze kôry – miazgotoku buka na východnom Slovensku. Lesnícky časopis, 12:521–532.
- Štefančík, L., Utschig, H., Pretzsch, H., 1996: Paralelné sledovanie rastu a štruktúry nezmiešaného bukového porastu na dlhodobých prebierkových výskumných plochách v Bavorsku a na Slovensku. Lesnictví - Forestry, 42:3–19.
- Utschig, H., Küsters, E., 2003: Growth reactions of common beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) related to thinning – 130 years observation of the thinning experiment Elmstein 20. Forstwissenschaftliches Centralblatt, 122:389–409.
- Vacek, S., Hejcman, M., 2012: Natural layering, foliation, fertility and plant species composition of a *Fagus sylvatica* stand above the alpine timberline in the Giant (Krkonoše) Mts., Czech Republic. European Journal of Forest Research, 131:799–810.
- Vacek, S., Vacek, Z., Podrazský, V., Bílek, L., Bulušek, D., Štefančík, I. et al., 2014: Structural Diversity of Autochthonous Beech Forests in Broumovské Stěny National Nature Reserve, Czech Republic. Austrian Journal of Forest Science, 131:191–214.
- Vacek, Z., Vacek, S., Bílek, L., Remeš, J., Štefančík, I., 2015: Changes in horizontal structure of natural beech forests on an altitudinal gradient in the Sudetes. Dendrobiology, 73:33–45.
- Vladovič, J. et al., 2014: Reakcia diverzity lesných fytoocenóz na zmenu edaficko-klimatických podmienok Slovenska. Zvolen, Technická univerzita, 165 p.

# Impact of applied silvicultural systems on spatial pattern of hornbeam-oak forests

Zdeněk Vacek<sup>1\*</sup>, Stanislav Vacek<sup>1</sup>, Lukáš Bílek<sup>1</sup>, Jan Král<sup>1</sup>,  
Iva Ulbrichová<sup>1</sup>, Jaroslav Simon<sup>2</sup>, Daniel Bulušek<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Czech University of Life Sciences Prague, Faculty of Forestry and Wood Sciences, Kamýcká 129,  
CZ – 165 21 Prague 6 - Suchbátka, Czech Republic

<sup>2</sup>Mendel University in Brno, Department of Forest Management and Applied Geoinformatics, Zemědělská 3,  
CZ – 613 00 Brno, Czech Republic

## Abstract

The spatial pattern of forest closely affects tree competition that drives the most of processes in forest ecosystems. Therefore, we focused on evaluation of the horizontal structure of high forest, coppice with standards and low forest in hornbeam-oak forests in the Protected Landscape Area Český kras (Czech Republic). The horizontal structure of tree layer individuals with crown projection centroids and natural regeneration was analysed for durmast oak (*Quercus petraea* (Matt.) Liebl.), European hornbeam (*Carpinus betulus* L.) and small-leaved linden (*Tilia cordata* Mill.) stands. Horizontal structure of the tree stems of the studied tree species in high forest was random, in oak it was moderately regular. In coppice with standards it was random in oak, in hornbeam and linden it was aggregated within 3 – 5 m and random up to a larger spacing. In low forest at a distance of 4 – 6 m the horizontal structure of the three studied tree species was aggregated while it was random at a larger spacing. The horizontal structure of natural regeneration was aggregated in all forest types. In coppice with standards and high forest, parent stand had significant negative effect on the natural regeneration at smaller distance (to 1.4 m from the stem). Crown centroids were more regularly distributed than tree stems, especially in low forest (2.0 m) and in linden (2.3 m). Our results contribute to existing knowledge about silvicultural systems and their impact on hornbeam-oak forests with implications for forest management and nature protection.

**Key words:** forest management; horizontal structure; forest dynamics; natural regeneration; Czech Republic

Editor: Bohdan Konôpka

## 1. Introduction

Analyses of the spatial distribution of trees in forest stands, either horizontal (regular, random and aggregated) or vertical (especially coenotic position), improve our knowledge of dynamic processes on the stand level (Pretzsch 2009; Vacek et al. 2015a). Spatial structure expresses the tree distribution within a space and at the same time it reflects local living conditions in the environs of any tree while these microsite conditions influence the dynamic natural processes such as growth, mortality and regeneration of forest stands and particular trees (Courbaud et al. 2001; Petritan et al 2007; Bulušek et al. 2016; Cukor et al. 2017).

Numerous methods of the spatial structure analysis were described in many studies of the forest ecosystem ecology (Goreaud 2000; Pommerening 2002; Goreaud &

Pélissier 2003; Perry et al. 2006; Pommerening & Stoyan 2006; Vacek et al. 2014). The majority of the studies are aimed at the position of the stem base. These studies compare forest stands and their stand types on the basis of the analysis of particular tree species, tree classes, diameter at breast height or height with respect to their spatial structure (Song et al. 2004) or they examine changes in the spatio-temporal structure in relation to silvicultural practices or natural processes such as growth, regeneration and mortality (Vacek & Lepš 1996; Ward et al. 1996; Goreaud 2000; Moser et al. 2002; Montes et al. 2004).

The interactions of the overstorey and understorey structure were described by Paillet et al. (2010), who confirmed that a change in the overstorey characteristics, mainly due to management in forests, has a great influence on the species richness of several taxonomic groups. Nevertheless, the reaction of plant species on spatial

\*Corresponding author. Zdeněk Vacek, e-mail: vacekz@fd.czu.cz

pattern in understorey is usually different (Bulušek et al. 2016; Slanař et al. 2017). For this reason, of crucial importance for sustainability is to understand the effect of a change in forest structure through forest management practices on understorey (Burrascano et al. 2011).

Coppice forest is one of the oldest forest systems known from many countries all around the world (Fujimori 2001). Coppices were used as a wood source until the second half of the 19<sup>th</sup> century (Peterken 1993). Since then, coppices have practically disappeared (Kopecký et al. 2013) because of gradual conversion of low forests to high forests, especially in central and northwestern Europe (Matthews 1991; Peterken 1993). The main reason for forest conversion was increasing demand for timber of higher quality (Hédal et al. 2010) and policy of nature conservation that considered the low forest system as undesirable at that time (Szabó 2010). On the contrary, the abandonment of this system can cause a reduction in species diversity (Spitzer et al. 2008) because of structure homogenization that limits mainly light-demanding species (Kopecký et al. 2013). Such a trend was proved by Vanhellemont et al. (2014), who demonstrated a decrease in the representation of light-demanding species and an increase in maple (*Acer platanoides* L.) and hazel (*Corylus avellana* L.).

Nowadays we see an increasing interest for coppicing (Mason & MacDonald 2002; Müllerová et al. 2015), which has three main reasons: i) increasing demand for firewood (Šplichalová et al. 2012), ii) increasing interest in nature protection, biodiversity and landscaping (Fuller 1992; Gurnell et al. 1992; Spitzer et al. 2008; Kopecký et al. 2013), iii) small forest owners consider this form of forest management as more suitable for their properties. Even though the interest in coppicing has increased, there is still a lack of information on the influence of silvicultural systems of forests on their ecological characteristics, properties of tree species growth and their structure

(Fürst et al. 2007; Vacík et al. 2009; Matula et al. 2012).

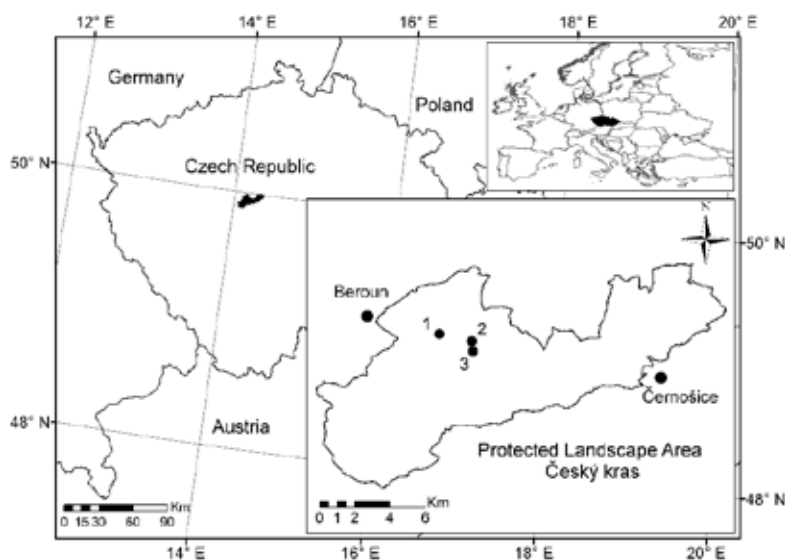
Very little knowledge is available especially of the horizontal distribution of tree stems and crowns in stands of different silvicultural systems, i.e. in low forest, coppice with standards and in high forest (Sumida et al. 2002; Pretzsch & Schütze 2005). In general, it is to state that aggregated spatial distribution of trees, which is a result of several stems that have developed from one stump, are usually typical of low forest, unlike high forests (Jancke et al. 2009).

The objective of this study was to evaluate the influence of silvicultural system and management on the spatial pattern of hornbeam-oak forests and its development in National Nature Reserve (NNR) Karlštejn in the last 12 years (2002–2014). The particular aims were to determine the horizontal, diameter and height structure of tree layer and regeneration individuals across the main tree species [durmast oak (*Quercus petraea* (Matt.) Liebl.), European hornbeam (*Carpinus betulus* L.) and small-leaved linden (*Tilia cordata* Mill.)] and analyse the crown plasticity of trees. We tested a hypothesis that aggregated distribution of individuals in the tree layer is typical of low forest and that in coppice with standards and in high forest with increasing number of generative individuals the distribution changes towards random or regular. When comparing tree stem bases and tree crowns, we expect more regular distribution in the latter case.

## 2. Material and methods

### 2.1. Study area

Study site is situated in the NNR Karlštejn in the Protected Landscape Area (PLA) Český kras in middle Bohemia (Fig. 1). The study was conducted on 3 permanent research plots (PRP) in the Doutnáč forest complex



**Fig. 1.** Localization of hornbeam-oak forests on permanent research plots 1 – 3 in the locality Doutnáč, Protected Landscape Area Český kras.



**Table 1.** Basic site and stands characteristics of permanent research plots.

| PRP   | Tree species      | Age | Height [m] | DBH [cm] | Stand volume [m <sup>3</sup> ha <sup>-1</sup> ] | Altitude [m] | Exposure | Slope [°] | Forest site type | Soil type        | Forest form            |
|-------|-------------------|-----|------------|----------|---|--------------|----------|-----------|------------------|------------------|------------------------|
| 1     | Oak               | 83  | 17         | 19       | 68  | 405          | NW       | 6         | 2W               | Rendzina modal   | High forest            |
|       | Beech             |     | 22         | 23       | 50  |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Linden            |     | 19         | 20       | 34  |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Hornbeam          |     | 16         | 17       | 18  |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Ash               |     | 22         | 24       | 12  |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Wild service tree |     | 18         | 22       | 5   |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Maple             |     | 18         | 19       | 3   |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
| 2     | Oak               | 107 | 17         | 22       | 58  | 433          | NE       | 2         | 2A (2W)          | Rendzina modal   | Coppice with standards |
|       | Linden            |     | 17         | 21       | 57  |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Hornbeam          |     | 15         | 16       | 18  |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Beech             |     | 20         | 24       | 22  |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Larch             |     | 21         | 29       | 15  |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Ash               |     | 18         | 18       | 8   |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Birch             |     | 19         | 23       | 2   |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
| Aspen | 23                | 27  | 3          |          |   |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
| 3     | Linden            | 86  | 18         | 19       | 58  | 415          | SE       | 17        | 2W               | Rendzina melanic | Low forest             |
|       | Hornbeam          |     | 16         | 15       | 42  |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Oak               |     | 17         | 19       | 37  |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
|       | Maple             |     | 18         | 18       | 5   |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |
| Ash   | 18                | 18  | 3          |          |   |              |          |           |                  |                  |                        |

Note: oak – *Quercus petraea* (Matt.) Liebl., linden – *Tilia cordata* Mill., hornbeam – *Carpinus betulus* L., beech – *Fagus sylvatica* L., larch – *Larix decidua* Mill., ash – *Fraxinus excelsior* L., birch – *Betula pendula* Roth, aspen – *Populus tremula* L., wild service tree – *Sorbus torminalis* (L.) Crantz, maple – *Acer platanoides* L.; 2A – Stony-colluvial maple-beech-oak forest, 2W – Limestone beech-oak forest.

of 67.64 ha in size (Table 1). Approximately until the mid-20<sup>th</sup> century the forests of Karlštejn locality were managed as coppices with standards with a low share of the overstorey of standards and high intensity of felling in coppice forest and cattle grazing. After the NNR Karlštejn was declared in 1955, forest management activities were completely terminated in 2004.

Annual average temperature ranged between 8–9 °C and precipitation is around 560 mm (Tolasz et al. 2007). A territory of the study site is characterized by warm dry summer and cool dry winter with a narrow annual temperature range (group Cfb, Köppen 1936), where average length of the growing season is about 165 days. The geological bedrock is mainly composed of grey or red limestones. Prevailing soils are Rendzinas, Luvisols and Cambisols (Němeček et al. 2001). According to forest site type classification study area of hornbeam-oak forests and scree forests belongs to *Fageto-Quercetum calcarium*.

## 2.2. Data collection

A theodolite was used for stem mapping within PRP 1–3 of 100 × 50 m (0.50 ha) in 2002. A FieldMap technology (IFER) was applied for a repeated measurement on PRP in 2014. During both measurements the position of all tree layer individuals of breast height diameter (DBH) ≥ 4 cm was localized. In the tree layer heights of the live crown base and crown perimeter were measured, minimally at 4 directions perpendicular to each other. DBH of the tree layer were measured with a metal calliper to the nearest mm while tree heights and heights of the live crown base were recorded with a laser Vertex hypsometer to the nearest 0.1 m.

Natural regeneration was mapped in 2014 on 10 × 50 transects on each PRP that were representative from the aspect of regeneration. For seedlings (measured all individuals 1 year and older) and saplings following characteristics were measured: position, height, height of the live crown base and crown width to the nearest cm.

## 2.3. Data analysis

For tree stems, crown centroids and natural regeneration, horizontal structure on particular plots was evaluated by Ripley's *L*-function (Ripley 1981) for all individuals and separately for the main tree species (durmast oak, European hornbeam and small-leaved linden). A test of the significance of deviations from the values expected for the random distribution of points was done by means of Monte Carlo simulations. The mean values of *L*-function were estimated as arithmetic means from *L*-functions computed for 1999 randomly generated point structures. Following stand structural indices based on a different type of calculation were computed: Hopkins-Skellam index (Hopkins & Skellam 1954), Pielou-Mountford index (Pielou 1959; Mountford 1961) and Clark-Evans index (Clark & Evans 1954). Among distribution indices based on the tree frequency in the particular quadrats David-Moore index (David & Moore 1954) was used. The quadrat size on PRP was 10 × 10 m (25 quadrats) and transects were divided into 80 quadrats (2.5 × 2.5 m each). The calculation of these characteristics was made using PointPro 2.1 software (Zahradník). Tab. 2 gives basic criteria of these indices. The relationship between spatial pattern of tree layer and natural regeneration were calculated by software R 3.1. (The R Foundation) by pair cross correlation function (Stoyan & Stoyan 1992).

**Table 2.** Overview of the indices describing the horizontal structure and their common interpretation.

| Index                            | Reference                   | Mean value   | Aggregation  | Regularity   |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|
| Index of non-randomness A        | Hopkins & Skellam 1954      | A=0.5        | A>0.5        | A<0.5        |
| Index of non-randomness $\alpha$ | Pielou 1959; Mountford 1961 | $\alpha = 1$ | $\alpha > 1$ | $\alpha < 1$ |
| Index of aggregation R           | Clark & Evans 1954          | R=1          | R<1          | R>1          |
| Index of cluster size ICS        | David & Moore 1954          | ICS=0        | ICS>0        | ICS<0        |

Statistical analyses were processed in the Statistica 12 software (StatSoft). The differences between tree crown plasticity of PRP and tree species were tested by one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA) and consequently tested by post-hoc comparison Tukey's HSD tests. In order to examine the interactions among stand characteristics and indices of horizontal structure, unconstrained principal component analysis (PCA) in Canoco 5.03 programme (Microcomputer Power) was applied. Data were centred and standardized before the analysis. The results of the PCA were visualized in the form of an ordination diagram.

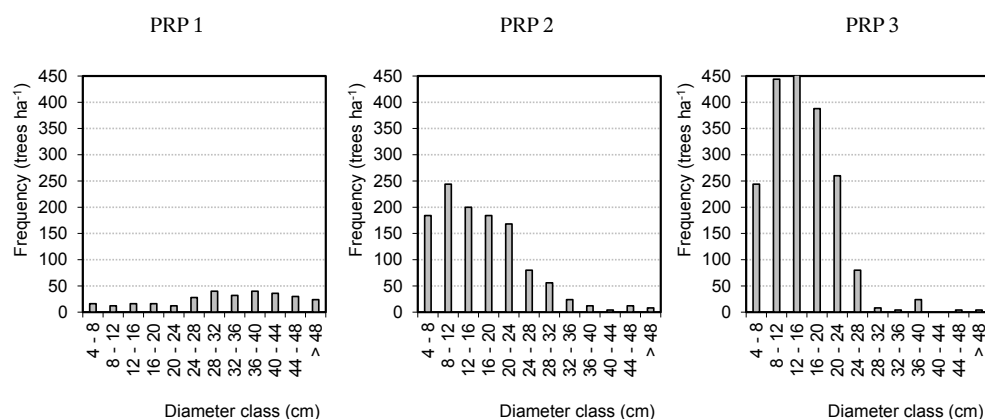
### 3. Results

#### 3.1. Tree layer

The diameter distribution clearly shows difference between the particular types of forest (Fig. 2). In the high forest (PRP 1), the lowest number of trees belongs to small diameter classes while this number is obviously the highest in low forest (PRP 3), and in coppice with standards (PRP 2) the values are rather closer to low

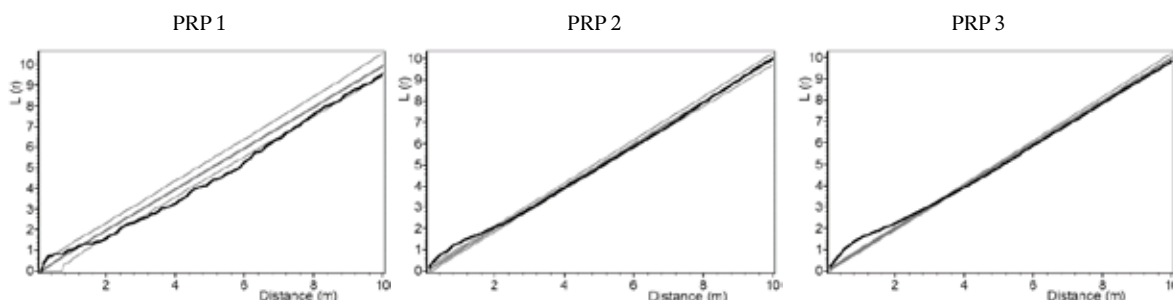
forest even with higher variability. Left-sided shape of diameter classes with high density of trees is characterized for low forest. Contrary, low number of trees with gauss curve shape of diameter classes is typical for even aged high forest (Fig. 2).

The spatial pattern of tree layer of the low forest situated on PRP 3 was aggregated according to A,  $\alpha$ , and R indices while it was random according to ICS index (Table 3). The L-function show that the highest intensity of aggregation occurred at tree distance of 0 to 3 m (Fig. 3). The tree layer of coppice with standards on PRP 2 was distributed randomly as shown identically by all computed structural indices (Tab. 3) and L-function (Fig. 3) with tendency to aggregation in 2014. The spatial pattern of trees of a high forest situated on PRP 1 was moderately regular according to ICS indices, while it was random according to A,  $\alpha$  and R index (Fig. 3, Table 3). The regular and random pattern of the trees according to their distances was also indicated by the L-function (Fig. 3). In course of 12 years, the highest dynamics of horizontal structure was observed in coppice with standard and low forest, while high forest showed minimum changes in spatial pattern.

**Fig. 2.** Diameter structure of tree layer on permanent research plots 1 (high forest), 2 (coppice with standards) and 3 (low forest).**Table 3.** Structural indices of stem bases for the main tree species and all tree individuals on permanent research plot 1 (high forest), 2 (coppice with standards) and 3 (low forest) in 2002 and 2014.

| Index    | Year | PRP 1 |          |        |                    | PRP 2 |                   |                   |                   | PRP 3             |                   |                   |                   |
|----------|------|-------|----------|--------|--------------------|-------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
|          |      | oak   | hornbeam | linden | tree layer         | oak   | hornbeam          | linden            | tree layer        | oak               | hornbeam          | linden            | tree layer        |
| A        | 2002 | 0.41  | 0.42     | 0.62   | 0.43               | 0.52  | 0.66 <sup>A</sup> | 0.67 <sup>A</sup> | 0.53              | 0.71 <sup>A</sup> | 0.79 <sup>A</sup> | 0.92 <sup>A</sup> | 0.69 <sup>A</sup> |
|          | 2014 | 0.45  | 0.44     | 0.62   | 0.43               | 0.54  | 0.67 <sup>A</sup> | 0.67 <sup>A</sup> | 0.56 <sup>A</sup> | 0.73 <sup>A</sup> | 0.83 <sup>A</sup> | 0.93 <sup>A</sup> | 0.67 <sup>A</sup> |
| $\alpha$ | 2002 | 0.90  | 0.98     | 1.75   | 0.92               | 1.16  | 1.37              | 1.54              | 1.15              | 1.68 <sup>A</sup> | 1.87 <sup>A</sup> | 2.81 <sup>A</sup> | 1.44 <sup>A</sup> |
|          | 2014 | 0.99  | 1.06     | 1.76   | 0.95               | 1.25  | 1.30              | 2.07 <sup>A</sup> | 1.17              | 1.86 <sup>A</sup> | 2.08 <sup>A</sup> | 2.93 <sup>A</sup> | 1.39 <sup>A</sup> |
| R        | 2002 | 1.13  | 1.16     | 1.03   | 1.10               | 1.03  | 0.72 <sup>A</sup> | 0.63 <sup>A</sup> | 0.97              | 0.69 <sup>A</sup> | 0.49 <sup>A</sup> | 0.32 <sup>A</sup> | 0.71 <sup>A</sup> |
|          | 2014 | 1.10  | 1.16     | 1.03   | 1.10               | 1.03  | 0.67 <sup>A</sup> | 0.42 <sup>A</sup> | 0.89 <sup>A</sup> | 0.69 <sup>A</sup> | 0.47 <sup>A</sup> | 0.32 <sup>A</sup> | 0.72 <sup>A</sup> |
| ICS      | 2002 | -0.30 | -0.27    | 0.01   | -0.29 <sup>R</sup> | -0.07 | 0.24              | 0.84              | 0.15              | 0.53 <sup>A</sup> | 1.21 <sup>A</sup> | 2.73 <sup>A</sup> | 0.25              |
|          | 2014 | -0.31 | -0.23    | 0.01   | -0.27 <sup>R</sup> | -0.07 | 0.25              | 1.81 <sup>A</sup> | 0.45 <sup>A</sup> | 0.64              | 1.10 <sup>A</sup> | 2.68 <sup>A</sup> | 0.21              |

Notes: <sup>A,R</sup> statistically significant ( $\alpha = 0.05$ ; A – aggregation, R – regularity).



**Fig. 3.** Horizontal structure of tree layer on permanent research plots 1 (high forest), 2 (coppice with standards) and 3 (low forest) expressed by  $L$ -function; the bold grey line represents the mean course for random spatial distribution of trees and the two thinner central curves represent 95% interval of reliability; when the black line of tree distribution on plot is below this interval, it indicates a tendency of trees toward regular distribution, and if it is above this interval, it shows a tendency toward aggregation.

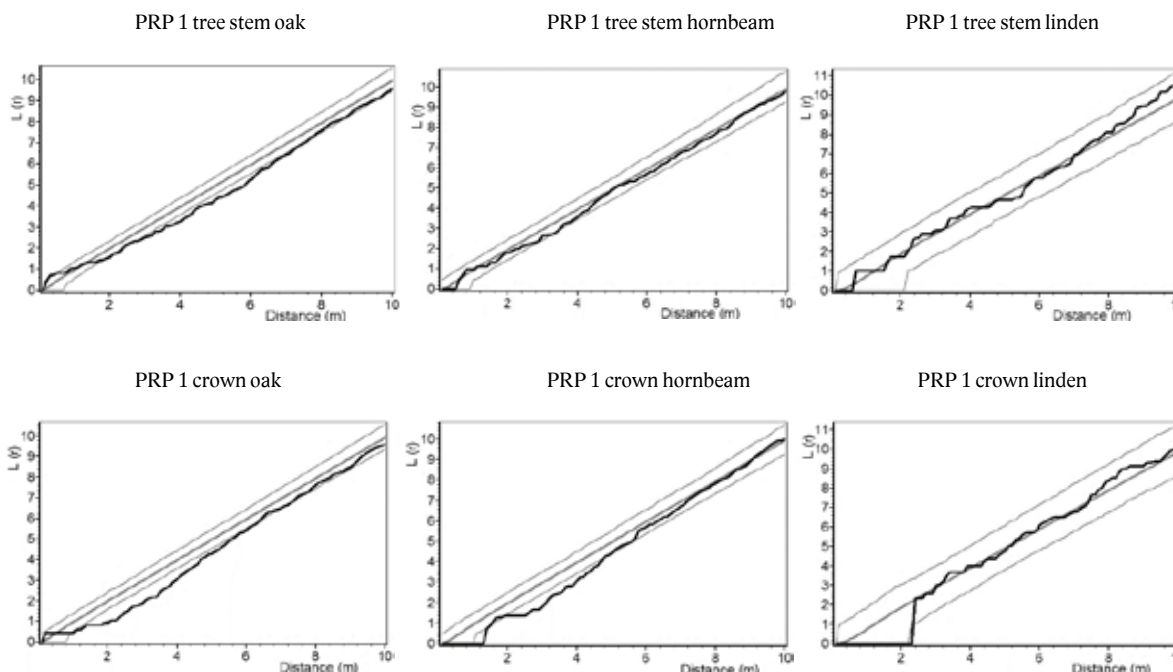
Horizontal structure of stem bases in the tree layer of the studied tree species (durmast oak, European hornbeam, small-leaved linden) in high forest on PRP 1 in oak was moderately regular at a spacing of 3 – 6 m (Fig. 4). The horizontal structure in hornbeam and linden was aggregated to a distance of 5.5 and 6 m, and farther it was also random. Horizontal structure in coppice with standards on PRP 2 was random in oak, aggregated in hornbeam and linden to a distance of 3 – 5 m and random at a larger spacing and tended toward random distribution in the course of dynamics. In low forest on PRP 3 in oak the horizontal structure of trees at a distance within 4 m was distinctly aggregated and indistinctly aggregated at a spacing of 4 – 8 m, and at a larger spacing it was random (Fig. 6). Only changes in horizontal structure occurred in the course of the studied 12 years.

The same information about horizontal structure of stem bases of the main tree species in the tree layer was

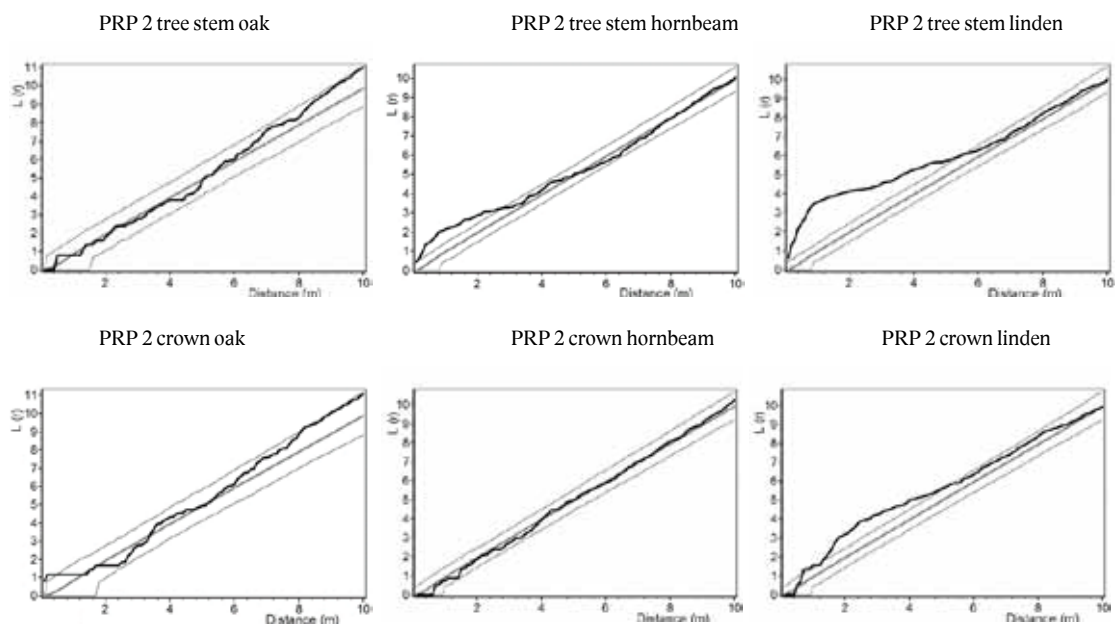
provided by structural indices (Table 3). In high forest on PRP 1 the majority of the indices show regular tree distribution for most tree species across the forest stand. Only in linden the distribution was aggregated according to  $\alpha$  and  $ICS$  indices while the  $A$  index shows this type of distribution in linden only. In coppice with standards on PRP 2 the majority of the indices suggest the aggregated distribution of trees for most woody species, and  $R$  and  $ICS$  indices indicate regular distribution in oak only. In low forest on PRP 3 the trees of all tree species were distributed in a significant aggregated pattern according to all indices.

### 3.2. Tree crown plasticity

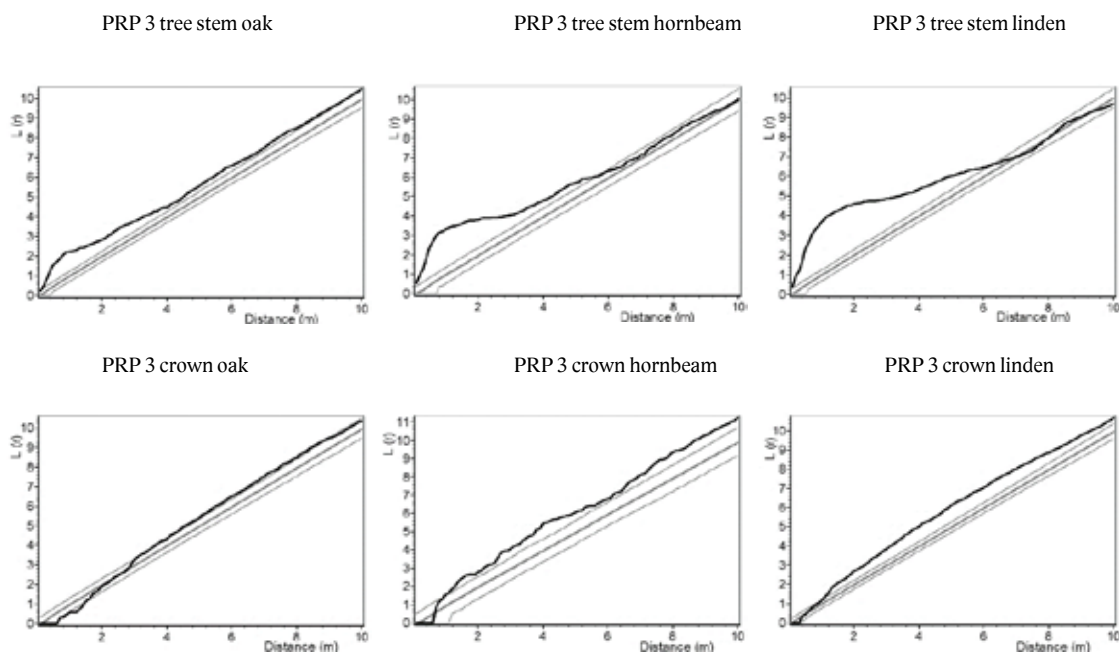
A comparison of the indices of the centroids of horizontal crown projection areas with the centroids of stem base



**Fig. 4.** Horizontal structure of tree stems and centres of crown projection areas of main tree species in high forest on permanent research plot 1 in 2014 expressed by  $L$ -function.



**Fig. 5.** Horizontal structure of tree stems and centres of crown projection areas of main tree species in coppice with standards on permanent research plot 2 in 2014 expressed by  $L$ -function.



**Fig. 6.** Horizontal structure of tree stems and centres of crown projection areas of main tree species in low forest on permanent research plot 3 in 2014 expressed by  $L$ -function.

of trees shows a still larger shift towards regular structure (Table 4, Fig. 4 – 6.). Horizontal structure of crown centroids in high forest on PRP 1 was regular according all study indices, while the stems of trees were randomly distributed according to  $A$ ,  $\alpha$  and  $R$  indices. Similar situation occurred also in the low forest on PRP 3 and the coppice with standards on PRP 2, when the structure of the crown centroids was even regular according to  $R$  index (aggregation in tree layer).

In high forest on PRP 1 the arrangement of the crown centres according to the  $L$ -function was more regular than that of the stem bases, especially at a distance of 1.5 – 4.5 m (Fig. 4). In hornbeam the distribution of tree crowns was regular at a distance of 2 – 4.5 m while in the other cases their distribution was random similarly like in the stem bases. In linden the centres of crown projection areas were distributed randomly similarly like the stem bases. In coppice with standards on PRP 2 the

**Table 4.** Structural indices of centres of crown projection areas for the main tree species and all tree individuals on permanent research plot 1 (high forest), 2 (coppice with standards) and 3 (low forest) in 2014.

| Index    | Year | PRP 1              |                    |                   |                    | PRP 2 |          |                   |                   | PRP 3 |                   |                   |                   |
|----------|------|--------------------|--------------------|-------------------|--------------------|-------|----------|-------------------|-------------------|-------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
|          |      | oak                | hornbeam           | linden            | tree layer         | oak   | hornbeam | linden            | tree layer        | oak   | hornbeam          | linden            | tree layer        |
| A        | 2014 | 0.34 <sup>R</sup>  | 0.33 <sup>R</sup>  | 0.67 <sup>A</sup> | 0.37 <sup>R</sup>  | 0.58  | 0.54     | 0.68 <sup>A</sup> | 0.51              | 0.53  | 0.75 <sup>A</sup> | 0.78 <sup>A</sup> | 0.54              |
| $\alpha$ | 2014 | 0.81 <sup>R</sup>  | 0.78 <sup>R</sup>  | 2.08 <sup>A</sup> | 0.83 <sup>R</sup>  | 1.46  | 1.11     | 1.42              | 1.01              | 1.26  | 2.20 <sup>A</sup> | 2.33 <sup>A</sup> | 1.13              |
| R        | 2014 | 1.34 <sup>R</sup>  | 1.32 <sup>R</sup>  | 1.05              | 1.23 <sup>R</sup>  | 1.06  | 1.01     | 0.74 <sup>A</sup> | 1.21 <sup>R</sup> | 1.09  | 0.77 <sup>A</sup> | 0.79 <sup>A</sup> | 1.11              |
| ICS      | 2014 | -0.45 <sup>R</sup> | -0.42 <sup>R</sup> | 0.03              | -0.56 <sup>R</sup> | 0.09  | -0.18    | 0.54 <sup>A</sup> | 0.02              | -0.02 | 0.45 <sup>A</sup> | 0.78 <sup>A</sup> | 0.36 <sup>A</sup> |

Notes: <sup>A,R</sup> statistically significant ( $\alpha = 0.05$ ; A – aggregation, R – regularity).

distribution of oak crown centres was random according to the  $L$ -function, rather tending towards regularity at a distance of about 2.5 m (Fig. 5). In hornbeam the crown centres were distributed randomly, also at spacing within 3 m when the distribution of stem bases was aggregated. Similarly, like the stem bases, the centres of linden crowns at a spacing of 1.5 – 4.5 m are also distributed in an aggregated manner, at the other distances randomly. In low forest on PRP 3 the distribution of the oak crown centres to a distance of 1.5 m was moderately regular, at a distance of 1.5 – 3 m it was random and at larger distances it was on the border of randomness and aggregation (Fig. 6). In hornbeam and linden, the centres of crown projection areas were distributed in a distinctly less aggregated manner than the stem bases, particularly at spacing within 4 – 5 m. The crown centres at a distance above 6 m were an exception in linden that were arranged in an aggregated manner and the stem bases were distributed randomly.

The above described horizontal structure of the centres of crown projection areas of the study tree species was documented also by structural indices with some deviations (Table 4). On PRP 1 the tree distribution in most species (instead of linden) was regular across the forest stand according to the majority of the indices. On PRP 2 the majority of the indices show the random distribution of the centres of crown projection areas of trees in most tree species across the forest stand. Only in linden the distribution was aggregated. On PRP 3 the crown centres were distributed in aggregated manner almost in hornbeam and linden according to the studied indices. Oak was an exception in which the distribution of the crown centres was random.

Table 5 shows the values of distances of the crown projection area centres from the stem base on PRP according to the main woody species in 2014. The largest deviations of the crown centre from stem bases were determined in low forest where the average deviation of all tree species was 2.0 m, followed by coppice with standards – 1.2 m, and the smallest deviation was found out in high forest – 1.0 m. The differences were statistically significant ( $P < 0.01$ ) only between low forest and coppice with standards on the one hand and high forest on the other.

Generally, higher degree of aggregation (higher for stems than crowns) was documented in low forest. The same trend was shown in coppice with standards in the case of linden and hornbeam. Oppositely, random to regular distribution for both stems and crown was shown in the case of high forest.

**Table 5.** The values of distances of the crown projection centres from the stem base for the main tree species and all tree individuals on permanent research plot 1 (high forest), 2 (coppice with standards) and 3 (low forest) and in 2014.

| PRP | Forest form            | Species    | Distance [m]      |         |         |
|-----|------------------------|------------|-------------------|---------|---------|
|     |                        |            | average           | minimum | maximal |
| 1   | High forest            | Oak        | 1.0 <sup>a</sup>  | 0.0     | 5.0     |
|     |                        | Hornbeam   | 1.1 <sup>a</sup>  | 0.1     | 4.9     |
|     |                        | Linden     | 1.0 <sup>a</sup>  | 0.0     | 2.7     |
|     |                        | Tree layer | 1.0 <sup>A</sup>  | 0.0     | 5.0     |
| 2   | Coppice with standards | Oak        | 1.1 <sup>a</sup>  | 0.1     | 3.8     |
|     |                        | Hornbeam   | 1.2 <sup>a</sup>  | 0.2     | 4.7     |
|     |                        | Linden     | 1.4 <sup>a</sup>  | 0.1     | 4.8     |
|     |                        | Tree layer | 1.2 <sup>A</sup>  | 0.1     | 4.8     |
| 3   | Low forest             | Oak        | 2.0 <sup>ab</sup> | 0.2     | 4.9     |
|     |                        | Hornbeam   | 1.6 <sup>a</sup>  | 0.1     | 4.1     |
|     |                        | Linden     | 2.3 <sup>b</sup>  | 0.1     | 4.6     |
|     |                        | Tree layer | 1.9 <sup>B</sup>  | 0.1     | 4.9     |

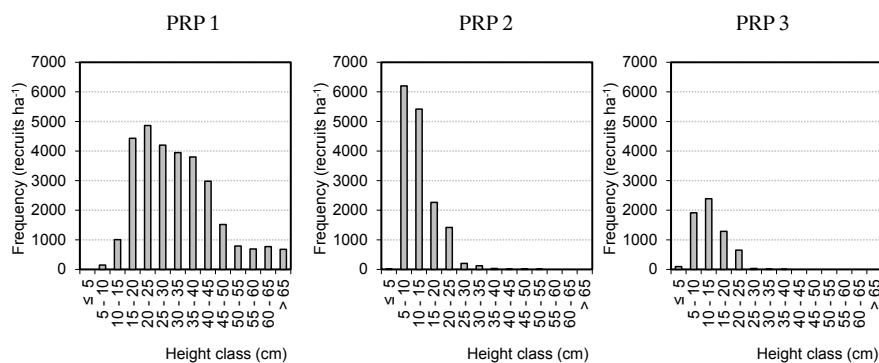
Notes: significant differences ( $P < 0.05$ ) among tree species on each PRP separately are indicated by small different letters and among all tree layer on three PRP are indicated by capital different letters.

### 3.3. Natural regeneration

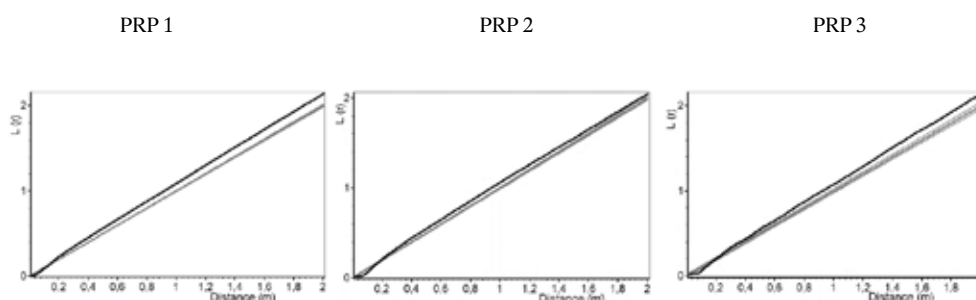
Vertical structure of recruits for particular PRP 1–3 is given in Fig. 7. The height distribution clearly shows the opposite situation with recruits density compared to diameter structure of tree layer that is also related to the particular types of forest (Fig. 2). The lowest number of recruits with poor vertical structure was observed in low forest, while high forest shows rich natural regeneration characterized by high height differentiation.

According to the computed indices on PRP in locality Doutnáč the horizontal structure of natural regeneration on all PRP was aggregated with tendency to randomness (Table 6). The highest aggregation was observed in high forest. The clumpy distribution of recruits according to their distance is also documented by the  $L$ -function (Fig. 8). In term of tree species, the horizontal structure of natural generative regeneration was mostly aggregated according to the  $L$ -function, only sporadically it was random at a spacing of 5 – 10 m. Prevailing aggregated distribution of recruits was also confirmed by structural indices. They document that the pattern of natural generative regeneration was random only exceptionally (Table 6).

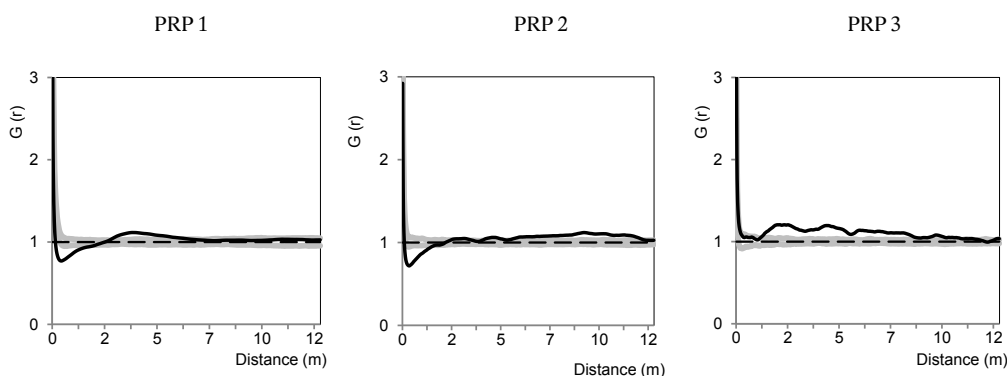
Results of pair cross correlation analysis showed that relationship between spatial pattern of tree layer and natural regeneration was negative (regular) at smaller distance on PRP 1 and 2 (from stem base to 1.4 m; Fig. 9). In low forest spatial pattern of all natural regeneration individuals in relation to canopy trees was evaluated as aggregated (positive relationship). Spatial pattern at



**Fig. 7.** Height structure of natural regeneration on permanent research plots 1 (high forest), 2 (coppice with standards) and 3 (low forest).



**Fig. 8.** Horizontal structure of natural regeneration on permanent research plots 1 (high forest), 2 (coppice with standards) and 3 (low forest) and expressed by  $L$ -function.



**Fig. 9.** Spatial relations of natural regeneration and the tree layer on the permanent research plots 1 – 3 expressed by the pair correlation function; the black line depicts the pair correlation function  $G(r)$  for real distances between individuals on the permanent research plots; two grey curves illustrate the 95% confidence interval for the random spatial pattern;  $r$  – radius defining distance between the selected points (trees and nature regeneration);  $G(r) > 1$  indicates a clustering at distances  $r$ , while  $G(r) < 1$  indicates a regularity in the respective distances  $r$ .

**Table 6.** Structural indices of natural generative regeneration for the main tree species and all tree individuals on permanent research plot 1 (high forest), 2 (coppice with standards) and 3 (low forest) in 2014.

| Index    | Year | PRP 1             |                   |                   |                   | PRP 2             |                   |                   |                   | PRP 3 |                   |        |                   |
|----------|------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------|-------------------|--------|-------------------|
|          |      | oak               | hornbeam          | linden            | regeneration      | oak               | hornbeam          | linden            | regeneration      | oak   | hornbeam          | linden | regeneration      |
| A        | 2014 | 0.61 <sup>A</sup> | 0.71 <sup>A</sup> | 0.86 <sup>A</sup> | 0.60 <sup>A</sup> | 0.63              | 0.71 <sup>A</sup> | 0.66 <sup>A</sup> | 0.52              | 0.59  | 0.90 <sup>A</sup> | 0.42   | 0.55 <sup>A</sup> |
| $\alpha$ | 2014 | 1.60 <sup>A</sup> | 3.21 <sup>A</sup> | 1.96              | 1.58 <sup>A</sup> | 2.13 <sup>A</sup> | 3.81 <sup>A</sup> | 2.11 <sup>A</sup> | 1.09              | 1.35  | 4.55 <sup>A</sup> | 1.01   | 1.23 <sup>A</sup> |
| R        | 2014 | 1.03              | 0.88              | 0.44 <sup>A</sup> | 0.92 <sup>A</sup> | 0.92              | 0.92              | 0.99              | 0.95 <sup>A</sup> | 0.95  | 0.70 <sup>A</sup> | 1.15   | 1.02              |
| ICS      | 2014 | 0.71 <sup>A</sup> | 0.05              | 0.24 <sup>A</sup> | 0.22 <sup>A</sup> | 0.22 <sup>A</sup> | 0.12              | 0.15 <sup>A</sup> | 0.14 <sup>A</sup> | 0.07  | 0.19              | 0.03   | 0.16 <sup>A</sup> |

Notes: <sup>A</sup> <sup>R</sup> statistically significant ( $\alpha = 0.05$ ; A – aggregation, R – regularity).



higher distances across the all plots was mostly random (no relationship).

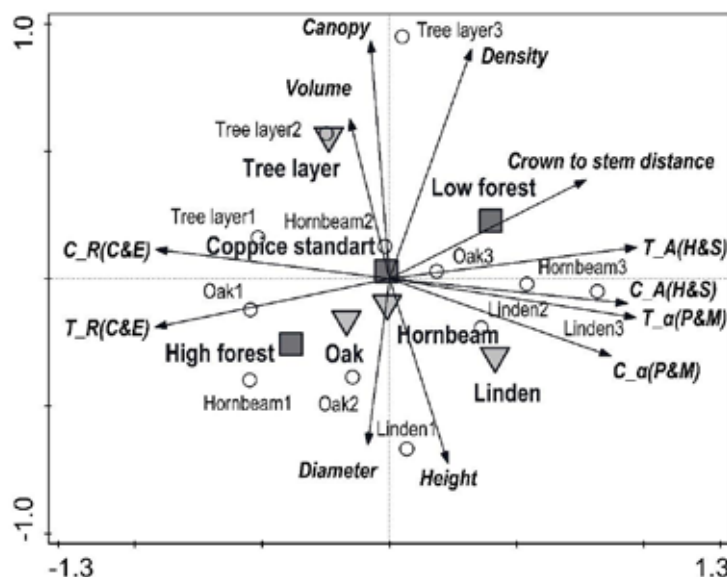
### 3.4. Interactions of stand characteristics and horizontal structure

Results of the PCA analysis are presented in the form of an ordination diagram in Fig. 10. The first ordination axis explains 50.0% of the variability of data, the first two axes explain together 78.1% and the first four axes explain together 93.1% of the variability of data. The first x-axis represents horizontal structure of tree layer and crown centroids. The second y-axis represents production parameters, resp. canopy (crown projection area), stand volume, mean height and DBH. Canopy and number of trees were positively correlated with one another, while these parameters were negatively correlated with DBH and height of trees. Distance of the crown projection centres from the stem base was positively correlated with  $A$  and  $\alpha$  aggregation indices (negatively with  $R$  index). This crown to stem distance increased with increasing aggregation of the stand. Moreover, aggregation indices of crown centroids were regularly distributed than tree stems. In terms of tree species, linden showed the greatest crown plasticity and tendency to aggregate structure, instead, the distribution of oak directed to regularity. The forest management had the greatest effect on the spatial pattern compared to tree species and stand parameters. Horizontal structure of the high forest directed to regularity, while the distribution of the low forest was highly aggregated.

## 4. Discussion

Our results confirmed, that the spatial pattern is an important aspect of the stand structure with regard to forest management (Bílek et al. 2011; Li et al. 2014; Slanař et al. 2017). Moreover it determines a microclimate in the forest stand, circulation of gaseous substances released and taken up by trees and other plants in the forest stand, stem shape and the mutual interactions with neighbouring trees (Mizunaga & Umeki 2001). Spatial pattern of forest stands influences many crucial ecosystem processes (Song et al. 2004; Pretzsch 2009) and horizontal structure plays a crucial role in interactions between the particular species and layers in plant communities (Dieckmann et al. 2000; Ngo Bieng et al. 2013), which also results from our study. These interactions participate in influencing the particular ecological processes such as growth, regeneration or mortality (Begon et al. 2006).

Relatively heterogeneous pattern was revealed on the studied plots according to structural indices: random representation prevailed in high forest and in coppice with standards, in low forest aggregated structure prevailed especially at a smaller spacing. These results are consistent with Jancke et al. (2009), who presented mostly aggregated distribution for low forests and random distribution for high forests. Results suggesting the random distribution of trees were also reported by Hui et al. (2007) or Li et al. (2012). Finally, the spatial pattern is strongly affected by site conditions (Vacek et al. 2015; Králíček et al. 2017). Structure influences the formation of the stand mosaic pattern in relation to the availability of light (Lhotka & Loewenstein 2008), water and nutrients



**Fig. 10.** Ordination diagram showing results of the PCA analysis of relationships between stand characteristics (*Density* number of live trees, *Diameter* mean quadratic diameter at breast height, *Height* mean height, *Volume*, *Canopy* crown projection area), and horizontal indices of tree layer (T) and Crowns (C) [ $A$  (H&S) Hopkins-Skellam index,  $R$  (C&E) Clark-Evans index,  $\alpha$  (P&M) Pielou-Mountford index]. Code abbreviation: ■ forest form (*Low forest*, *Coppice with standards*, *High forest*); ▼ tree species (*Oak*, *Hornbeam*, *Linden*, *Tree layer*), • tree species and number of plots (1, 2, 3).

within the entire forest ecosystem (Prescott 2002; Lang et al. 2012).

Our results are also consistent with results of Petritan et al. (2014), who reported random distribution for dominant trees in the forest stand, aggregated distribution at a distance of 8–12 m for middle storey and highly aggregated distribution for the lowest storey. The random spatial pattern of the tree layer is typical of the majority of high forest stands at the stage of optimum. Similar results were obtained in mixed forests in protected areas of middle Europe (Szwagrzyk & Czerwczak M. 1993; Králíček et al. 2017; Vacek et al. 2016, 2017, 2018). Jancke et al. (2009) presented highly aggregated structure with two peaks for low forest when the one peak is at a distance of ca. 1 m and the other peak is at 5.6 m while the second peak is explained by the distance of stumps from which the low forest has sprouted. Aggregated structure was also reported by Getzin et al. (2008), who explained this structure on the basis of biotope heterogeneity; in our case this pattern of structure can be explained particularly by a different silvicultural system applied in the past. Similarly like in other studies of natural regeneration (Nagel et al. 2006; Ambrož et al. 2015), the spatial pattern of regeneration was aggregated. Aggregated structure for recruits can be further supported by limited (heavy) seed dispersal of some tree species (Getzin et al. 2008; Packham et al. 2012). Parent stand had significant effect on the spatial pattern of natural regeneration (Vacek et al. 2015b; Králíček et al. 2017). Negative interaction at smaller distances was observed in high forest and coppice with standards, but no relationship with tendency to aggregation was in low forest. Same situation because of vegetative regeneration was documented in Krkonoše Mountains (Bulušek et al. 2017). Microsite (Štícha et al. 2010; Vacek et al. 2015b), germination rate, seedling survival (Petritan et al. 2004), seed predation and dispersal by animals (Mosandl & Kleinert 1998) are other factors that can influence spatial pattern of young trees.

With respect to the relatively short observation period (Kuchel et al. 2012) of 12 years, the results of our study show dynamics in the horizontal structure of the tree layer of studied tree species but more pronounced differences were revealed between stem and crown spatial pattern in the same period. Crown plasticity allows more effective utilization of growth space, which provides a potential to maintain the high productivity of forest (Schröter et al. 2012; Bulušek et al. 2017). In our study, distances between crown centroids and stem base ranged from 1.0 m in high forest to 2.0 m in low forest; the highest mean distance was observed in linden on PRP 3 (2.3 m). For example within this range, displacement about 1.5 m was observed in beech forests in Czech Republic and Poland (Bulušek et al. 2017). Similarly, high crown plasticity was reported also by Olesen (2001) who documented also higher regularity of crown distribution compared to stems.

According to various research results (Li & Li 2003; Kint 2005; Zhao et al. 2009) the present structure of studied forest stands will change, nevertheless changes in horizontal structure are rather slow. More pronounced changes can be expected in vertical and diameter structure with ongoing natural regeneration and its development. On the other hand, with abandonment of forest management, spontaneous development of stands will probably lead to a certain unification of stand structural characteristics in a broader scale.

## 5. Conclusion

The study significantly confirms the hypothesis about the influence of forest management on the spatial pattern of hornbeam-oak forests and their stand structural characteristics. Doutnáč locality in the NNR Karlštejn has a heterogeneous structure of tree layers and natural regeneration on the studied plots as result of different silvicultural systems applied in the past. However, slightly heterogeneous habitat (slope, exposure) and stand conditions (age) of the compared plots must be considered when interpreting the present results. Despite this, we see evident tendencies in stand development for particular management systems. Generally, higher degree of aggregation was documented in low forest. The same trend was shown in coppice with standards in the case of linden and hornbeam. In the case of high forest, random to regular distribution for both stems and crown was shown. Crown centroids of trees were more regularly distributed than tree stems, especially in linden. Oppositely small crown plasticity was observed in oak. Saplings and seedlings were mostly aggregated, but with increasing size of recruits their spatial distribution mainly in the case of high forest tends to be random.

## Acknowledgements

*The study was supported by the Ministry of Agriculture of the Czech Republic (Project No. QJ1530298) and by the Czech University of Life Sciences Prague, Faculty of Forestry and Wood Sciences (Project IGA No. B03/17).*

## References

- Ambrož, R., Vacek, S., Vacek, Z., Král, J., Štefančík, I., 2015: Current and simulated structure, growth parameters and regeneration of beech forests with different game management in the Lány Game Enclosure. *Lesnícky časopis - Forestry Journal*, 61:78–88.
- Begon, M., Townsend, C. R., Harper, J. L., 2006: *Ecology: from individuals to ecosystems*, 4<sup>th</sup> edn. Oxford, Blackwell Publishing, 750 p.
- Bílek, L., Remeš, J., Zahradník, D., 2011: Managed vs. unmanaged. Structure of beech forest stands (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) after 50 years of development, Central Bohemia. *Forest Systems*, 20:122–138.

- Bulušek, D., Vacek, Z., Vacek, S., Král, J., Bílek, L., Králíček, I., 2016: Spatial pattern of relict beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) forests in the Sudetes of the Czech Republic and Poland. *Journal of Forest Science*, 62:293–305.
- Burrascano, S., Sabatini, F. M., Blasi, C., 2011: Testing indicators of sustainable forest management on understorey composition and diversity in southern Italy through variation partitioning. *Plant Ecology*, 212:829–841.
- Clark, P. J., Evans, F. C., 1954: Distance to nearest neighbour as a measure of spatial relationship in populations. *Ecology*, 35:445–453.
- Courbaud, B., Goreaud, F., Dreyfus, P., Bonnet, F. R., 2001: Evaluating thinning strategies using a tree distance dependent growth model: some examples based on the CAPSIS software “unevenaged spruce forests” module. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 145:15–28.
- Cukor, J., Baláš, M., Kupka, I., Tužinský, M., 2017: The condition of forest stands on afforested agricultural land in the Orlické hory Mts. *Journal of Forest Science*, 63:1–8.
- David, F. N., Moore, P. G., 1954: Notes on contagious distributions in plant populations. *Annals of Botany of London*, 18:47–53.
- Dieckmann, U., Law, R., Metz, J. A. J., 2000: The geometry of ecological interactions: simplifying spatial complexity. Cambridge, Cambridge University Press, 516 p.
- Fujimori, T., 2001: Ecological and Silvicultural Strategies for Sustainable Forest Management. Amsterdam, Elsevier, 398 p.
- Fuller, R. J., 1992: Effects of coppice management on woodland breeding birds. In: Buckley G. P. (ed.): *Ecology and Management of Coppice Woodlands*. London, Chapman and Hall, p. 169–193.
- Fürst, C., Vacík, H., Lorz, C., Makeschin, F., Podrázský, V., Janeček, V., 2007: Meeting the challenges of process-oriented forest management – editorial. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 248:1–5.
- Getzin, S., Wiegand, T., Wiegand, K., He, F., 2008: Heterogeneity influences spatial patterns and demographics in forest stands. *Journal of Ecology*, 96:807–820.
- Goreaud, F., 2000: Apports de l’analyse de la structure spatiale en forêt tempérée à l’étude et la modélisation des peuplements complexes. Doctoral thesis. Nancy, ENGREF (AgroParisTech), 527 p.
- Goreaud, F., Pelissier, R., 2003: Avoiding misinterpretation of biotic interactions with the intertype K-12-function: population independence vs. random labelling hypotheses. *Journal of Vegetation Science*, 14:681–692.
- Gurnell, J., Hicks, M., Whitebread, S., 1992: The effects of coppice management on small mammal populations. In: Buckley G. P. (ed.): *Ecology and Management of Coppice Woodlands*. London, Chapman and Hall, p. 213–233.
- Harms, K. E., Wright, S. J., Calderon, O., Hernandez, A., Herre, E. A., 2000: Pervasive density-dependent recruitment enhances seedling diversity in a tropical forest. *Nature*, 404:493–495.
- Hédl, R., Kopecký, M., Komárek, J., 2010: Half a century of succession in a temperate oakwood: from species-rich community to mesic forest. *Diversity and Distributions*, 16:267–276.
- Hopkins, B., Skellam, J. G., 1954: A new method for determining the type of distribution of plant individuals. *Annals of Botany*, 18:213–227.
- Hui, G. Y., Gadow, K. V., Hu, Y. B., Xu, H., 2007: Structure-based forest management. Beijing, China Forestry Press, 200 p.
- Jancke, O., Dorren, L. K. A., Berger, F., Fuhr, M., Köhl, M., 2009: Implications of coppice stand characteristics on the rockfall protection function. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 259:124–131.
- Kint, V., 2005: Structural development in ageing temperate Scots pine stands. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 214:237–250.
- Kopecký, M., Hédl, R., Szabó, P., 2013: Non-random extinctions dominate plant community changes in abandoned coppices. *Journal of Applied Ecology*, 50:79–87.
- Králíček, I., Vacek, Z., Vacek, S., Remeš, J., Bulušek, D., Král, J. et al., 2017: Dynamics and structure of mountain autochthonous spruce-beech forests: impact of hilltop phenomenon, air pollutants and climate. *Dendrobiology*, 77:119–137.
- Kucbel, S., Saniga, M., Jaloviari, P., Vencurik, J., 2012: Stand structure and temporal variability in old-growth beech-dominated forests of the northwestern Carpathians: A 40-years perspective. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 264:125–133.
- Lang, A. C., Härdtle, W., Bruehlheide, H., Kröber, W., Schröter, M., Wehrden von H., Oheimb von, G., 2012: Horizontal, but not vertical canopy structure is related to stand functional diversity in a subtropical slope forest. *Ecological Research*, 27:181–189.
- Lhotka, J. M., Loewenstein, E. F., 2008: Influence of canopy structure on the survival and growth of underplanted seedlings. *New Forests*, 35:89–104.
- Li, Y., Hui, G., Zhao, Z., Hu, Y., 2012: The bivariate distribution characteristics of spatial structure in natural Korean pine broad-leaved forest. *Journal of Vegetation Science*, 23:1180–1190.
- Li, J., Li, J., 2003: Regeneration and restoration of broad-leaved Korean pine forests in the Lesser Xing’an Mountains of Northern China. *Acta Ecologica Sinica*, 23:1268–1277.
- Li, Y., Ye, S., Hui, G., Hu, Y., Zhao, Z., 2014: Spatial structure of timber harvested according to structure-based forest management. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 322:106–116.

- Mason, C. F., MacDonald, S. M., 2002: Responses of ground flora to coppice management in an English woodland – a study using permanent quadrats. *Biodiversity & Conservation*, 11:1773–1789.
- Matthews, J. D., 1991: *Silvicultural Systems*. Oxford, Oxford University Press, 284 p.
- Matula, R., Svátek, M., Kůrová, J., Úradníček, L., Kadavý, J., Kneiff, M., 2012: The sprouting ability of the main tree species in Central European coppices: implications for coppice restoration. *European Journal of Forest Research*, 131:1501–1511.
- Mizunaga, H., Umeki, T., 2001: The relationships between tree size and spatial distribution of foliage-mass within crowns of Japanese cedars (*Cryptomeria japonica*) in young plantations. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 149:129–140.
- Montes, F., Canellas, I., del Rio, M., Calama, R., Montero, G., 2004: The effects of thinning on the structural diversity of coppice forests. *Annals of Forest Science*, 61:771–779.
- Mosandl, R., Kleinert, A., 1998: Development of oaks (*Quercus petraea* (Matt.) Liebl.) emerged from bird-dispersed seeds under old-growth pine (*Pinus sylvestris* L.) stands. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 106:35–44.
- Moser, W. K., Jackson, S. M., Podrázský, V., Larsen, D. R., 2002: Examination of stand structure on quail plantations in the Red Hills region of Georgia and Florida managed by the Stoddard-Neel system: an example for forest managers. *Forestry*, 75:443–449.
- Mountford, M. D., 1961: On E. C. Pielou's index of non-randomness. *Journal of Ecology*, 49:271–275.
- Müllerová, J., Hédl, R., Szabó, P., 2015: Coppice abandonment and its implications for species diversity in forest vegetation. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 343:88–100.
- Nagel, T. A., Svoboda, M., Diaci, J., 2006: Regeneration patterns after intermediate wind disturbance in an old-growth *Fagus–Abies* forest in southeastern Slovenia. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 226:268–278.
- Němeček, J., Macků, J., Vokoun, J., Vavříček, D., Novák, P., 2001: Taxonomický klasifikační systém pūd České republiky. ČZU, Praha, 78 p.
- Ngo Bieng, M. A., Perot, T., de Coligny, F., Goreaud, F., 2013: Spatial pattern of trees influences species productivity in a mature oak–pine mixed forest. *European Journal of Forest Research*, 132:841–850.
- Olesen, T., 2001: Architecture of a cool-temperate rain forest canopy. *Ecology*, 82:2719–2730.
- Packham, J. R., Thomas, P. A., Atkinson, M. D., Degen, T., 2012: Biological flora of the British Isles: *Fagus sylvatica*. *Journal of Ecology*, 100:1557–1608.
- Paillet, Y., Bergès, L., Hjältén, J., Ódor, P., Avon, C., Bernhardt-Römermann, M. et al., 2010: Biodiversity differences between managed and unmanaged forests: meta-analysis of species richness in Europe. *Conservation Biology*, 24:101–112.
- Perry, G. L. W., Miller, B. P., Enright, N. J., 2006: A comparison of methods for the statistical analysis of spatial point patterns in plant ecology. *Plant Ecology*, 187:59–82.
- Peterken, G. F., 1993: *Woodland Conservation and Management*. London, Chapman and Hall, 314 p.
- Petritan, A. M., Lüpke, B., von Petritan, I. C., 2007: Effects of shade on growth and mortality of maple (*Acer pseudoplatanus*), ash (*Fraxinus excelsior*) and beech (*Fagus sylvatica*) saplings. *Forestry*, 80:397–412.
- Petritan, I. C., Marzano, R., Petritan, A., Lingua, E., 2014: Overstory succession in a mixed *Quercus petraea–Fagus sylvatica* old growth forest revealed through the spatial pattern of competition and mortality. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 326:9–17.
- Pielou, E. C., 1959: The use of point-to-plant distances in the study of the pattern of plant populations. *Journal of Ecology*, 47:607–613.
- Pommerening, A., 2002: Approaches to quantifying forest structures. *Forestry*, 75:305–324.
- Pommerening, A., Stoyan, D., 2006: Edge-correction needs in estimating indices of spatial forest structure. *Canadian Journal of Forest Research*, 36:1723–1739.
- Prescott, C. E., 2002: The influence of the forest canopy on nutrient cycling. *Tree Physiology*, 22:1193–1200.
- Pretzsch, H., Schütze, G., 2005: Crown allometry and space efficiency of Norway spruce (*Picea abies* L. Karst.) and European beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) in pure and mixed stands. *Plant Biology*, 7:628–639.
- Pretzsch, H., 2009: Forest dynamics, growth, and yield. In *Forest Dynamics, Growth and Yield*, Springer Berlin Heidelberg, p. 1–3.
- Ripley, B. D., 1981: *Spatial statistics*. New York, John Wiley & Sons, 252 p.
- Schröter, M., Härdtle, W., Oheimb von G., 2012: Crown plasticity and neighborhood interactions of European beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) in an old-growth forest. *European Journal of Forest Research*, 131:787–798.
- Slanař, J., Vacek, Z., Vacek, S., Bulušek, D., Cukor, J., Štefančík, I. et al., 2017: Long-term transformation of submontane spruce-beech forests in the Jizerské hory Mts.: dynamics of natural regeneration. *Central European Forestry Journal*, 63:213–225.
- Song, B., Chen, J., Silbernagel, J., 2004: Three-dimensional canopy structure of an old-growth Douglas-fir forest. *Forest Science*, 50:376–386.
- Spitzer, L., Konvička, M., Beneš, J., Tropek, R., Tuf, I., Tufova, J., 2008: Does closure of traditionally managed open woodlands threaten epigeic invertebrates? Effects of coppicing and high deer densities. *Biological Conservation*, 141:827–837.
- Stoyan, D., Stoyan, H., 1992: *Fraktale Formen und Punktfelder: Methoden der Geometrie-Statistik*. Berlin, Akademie-Verlag GmbH, 394 p.

- Sumida, A., Terazawa, I., Togashi, A., Komiyama, A., 2002: Spatial arrangement of branches in relation to slope and neighbourhood competition. *Annals of Botany*, 89:301–310.
- Szabó, P., 2010: Driving forces of stability and change in woodland structure: a case-study from the Czech lowlands. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 259:650–656.
- Szwagrzyk, J., Czerwczak, M., 1993: Spatial patterns of trees in natural forests of East Central Europe. *Journal of Vegetation Science*, 4:469–476.
- Šplíchalová, M., Adamec, Z., Kadavý, J., Kneifl, M., 2012: Probability model of sessile oak (*Quercus petraea* (Matt.) Liebl.) stump sprouting in the Czech Republic. *European Journal of Forest Research*, 131:1611–1618.
- Štícha, V., Kupka, I., Zahradník, D., Vacek, S., 2010: Influence of micro-relief and weed competition on natural regeneration of mountain forests in the Šumava Mountains. *Journal of Forest Science*, 56:218–224.
- Tolasz, R., Míková, T., Valeriánová, T., Voženílek, V. (eds.), 2007: *Climate atlas of Czech*. Czech Hydrometeorological Institute and Palacký University, Olomouc, 255 p.
- Vacek, S., Lepš, J., 1996: Spatial dynamics of forest decline: the role of neighbouring trees. *Journal of Vegetation Science*, 7:789–798.
- Vacek, S., Vacek, Z., Podrázský, V., Bílek, L., Bulušek, D., Štefančík, I. et al., 2014: Structural Diversity of Autochthonous Beech Forests in Broumovské Stěny National Nature Reserve, Czech Republic. *Austrian Journal of Forest Science*, 131:191–214.
- Vacek, Z., Vacek, S., Bílek, L., Remeš, J., Štefančík, I., 2015a: Changes in horizontal structure of natural beech forests on an altitudinal gradient in the Sudetes. *Dendrobiology*, 73:33–45.
- Vacek, Z., Vacek, S., Podrázský, V., Bílek, L., Štefančík, I., Moser, W. K. et al., 2015b: Effect of tree layer and microsite on the variability of natural regeneration in autochthonous beech forests. *Polish Journal of Ecology*, 63:233–246.
- Vacek, Z., Vacek, S., Podrázský, V., Král, J., Bulušek, D., Putalová, T. et al., 2016: Structural diversity and production of alder stands on former agricultural land at high altitudes. *Dendrobiology* 75:31–44.
- Vacek, Z., Vacek, S., Bulušek, D., Podrázský, V., Remeš, J., Král, J., Putalová, T., 2017: Effect of fungal pathogens and climatic factors on production, biodiversity and health status of ash mountain forests. *Dendrobiology*, 77:161–175.
- Vacek, S., Vacek, Z., Kalousková, I., Cukor, J., Bílek, L., Moser, W. K. et al., 2018: Sycamore maple (*Acer pseudoplatanus* L.) stands on former agricultural land in the Sudetes – evaluation of ecological value and production potential. *Dendrobiology*, 79:61–76.
- Vacik, H., Zlatanov, T., Trajkov, P., Dekanic, S., Lexer, M. J., 2009: Role of coppice forests in maintaining forest biodiversity. *Silva Balcanica*, 10:35–45.
- Vanhellemont, M., Baeten, L., Verheyen, K., 2014: Relating changes in understorey diversity to environmental drivers in an ancient forest in northern Belgium. *Plant Ecology and Evolution*, 147:22–32.
- Ward, J. S., Parker, G. R., Ferrandino, F. J., 1996: Long-term spatial dynamics in an old-growth deciduous forest. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 83:189–202.
- Zhao, Z., Hui, G., Yuan, S., Liu, W., Wang, R., 2009: Spatial structure characteristics of a *Quercus aliena* var. *acuteserrata* natural forest in Xiaolongshan. *Scientia Silvae Sinicae*, 45:1–6.

# Efficiency of the Slovak forestry in comparison to other European countries: An application of Data Envelopment Analysis

Miroslav Kovalčík

National Forest Centre - Forest Research Institute Zvolen, T. G. Masaryka 2175/22, SK – 960 92 Zvolen, Slovak Republic

## Abstract

Efficiency improvement is important for increasing the competitiveness of any sector and the same is essential for the forestry sector. A non-parametric approach – Data Envelopment Analysis (DEA) was used for the assessment of forestry efficiency. The paper presents the results of the efficiency evaluation of forestry in European countries using DEA. One basic and two modified models (*labour* and *wood sale*) were proposed, based on available input and output data from Integrated Environmental and Economic Accounts for Forests and specific conditions of forestry also. The sample size was 22 countries and the data for 2005–2008 was processed. Obtained results show average efficiency in the range of 69 – 90% (depending on the model). Based on the results of the analysis following can be concluded: Slovak forestry achieved under average efficiency in comparison to other European countries, there were great differences in efficiency among individual countries; state of economy (advanced countries and countries with economy in transition) and region did not influence the efficiency statistically significant.

**Key words:** efficiency assessment; Data Envelopment Analysis; forestry sector; labour model; wood sale model

Editor: Miroslav Hájek

## 1. Introduction

In the early 1990s, the states of Middle and Eastern Europe began to transform their economy to a market-oriented. This fact influenced whole economy as well as the forestry sector. Until 1990, the state managed all forests in Slovakia central planned the wood flow from producers to consumers. After 1990 due to restitution, the forestry sector was fragmented with increasing of the number of forest land owners and related decentralization of production activities. The process of forest land restitutions has not been completed yet. It stagnates mainly at small private forest owners. Other problem regarding to great number of small forest land owners and resulting land communities without legal subjectivity, is the restricted use of financial resources from the European funds and low interest to associate the small forest land owners. All these facts have influenced efficiency of forestry in a serious way. Therefore the question is how efficient is the Slovak forestry in comparison to other European countries?

Measuring and improving efficiency is important to encourage progress in any organization (Sowlati 2005). It has received increasing attention also in the forestry sector. Time and capital are essentially the largest inputs within forestry. In other words, forestry is a capital-inten-

sive activity with very long production periods. This capital-intensity is fundamentally reflected in the efficiency analysis of forestry investments and in the evaluation of forest properties (Saastamoinen & Matero 2006). Other sector specific problems of performance measurement are: uniformity of product and production capacities within wood production, forests are ecosystems as well as production systems, product and benefit multiplicity, joint production and multiple use, geographical and biological variety and others.

Efficiency is in general defined as a quotient or ratio of outputs being produced to inputs being needed (Oesten & Roeder 2001). This quotient of aggregated outputs to aggregated inputs [1] is needed to determinate the efficiency for each production unit (Hoffmann 2006).

$$P_k = \frac{\text{Aggregated outputs}}{\text{Aggregated inputs}} \quad [1]$$

where:  $P_k$  – efficiency of the production unit  $k$ .

Different methods and approaches have been used to evaluate the efficiency of production process. They are based on different principles and functions. In general, the evaluation of the efficiency is based on a production function, which specifies the relationship between the observed inputs and outputs. The production frontier

\*Corresponding author. Miroslav Kovalčík, e-mail: kovalcik@nlcsk.org



indicates the maximum output that is possible to be produced under different input's combination and the ratio of the unit's output to the maximum possible outputs gives the measured efficiency. Those approaches, in which the production function is either known or estimated statistically, are the *parametric approaches*. The disadvantages of these parametric approaches are that an explicit functional form of inputs and output is needed. General known are also the principles, in which the performance is being evaluated on the ground of a ratio of received revenues to spent costs (Cost Benefit Analysis). In many situations, the functional form of the production function is not known or it is difficult to estimate. Therefore it is desirable to compare single production units to real achievable production. This is possible by using non-parametric approaches. Farrell's method of computing the efficient function from a set of observation was the foundation for *non-parametric approaches* in measuring efficiency and productivity. In the non-parametric approaches, no assumptions are made about the form of the production function. Instead, a best practice function is built empirically from the observed inputs and outputs. This is the main advantage of this group of methods (Sowlati 2005). Detailed classification of different methods and approaches for evaluation of efficiency describe Schefczyk & Gerpott (1994). Evaluation methods can be systematized on the basis of three main criteria: 1. deterministic versus stochastic character of method, 2. parametric or non-parametric methods and 3. evaluation of efficiency by using mathematical programming models versus statistical approaches. Choice of the appropriate method and the way of the efficiency evaluation depend mainly on availability of data and the form of variables to be evaluated.

Although the first paper written on DEA appeared in 1978, and it has been applied in different areas since then, the forestry community has been slow in adapting the method and applying it to measure the efficiency of forest related activities (Sowlati 2005). There are few applications of DEA in forestry and forestry-related sectors, e.g. Kao & Yang 1991, 1992; LeBel 1996; Shiba 1997; LeBel & Stuart 1998; Yin 1998, 1999; Kao 2000; Hanninen & Viitala 2003; Bogetoft et al. 2003; Nyruud & Baardsen 2003; Hoffmann & Sekot 2004; Hofmann 2006; Sekot & Hoffmann 2007; Kovalčík 2007.

This explorative study assessed efficiency of forestry in European countries by using non-parametric approach – Data Envelopment analysis (DEA), compared the Slovak forestry efficiency according to other European countries and analysed differences in efficiency of individual countries or groups of countries.

## 2. Methods and material

### 2.1. Models of Data Envelopment Analysis being used

Data Envelopment Analysis (DEA) is a relatively new technique in productivity management for measuring efficiency of many homogenous entities. It is a linear programming method that can consider many inputs and outputs simultaneously to measure the relative efficiencies of the units to be evaluated, termed in this case decision making units (DMUs). In particular, the DEA models do not require the assignment of predetermined weights to input and output factors. In contradiction to the parametric approach, DEA does not require any assumptions about the production form. DEA models have been effectively applied for measuring the relative efficiency of the production units in many fields (Liu 2005).

The DEA approach was developed by Charnes et al. (1978) being called Charnes-Cooper-Rhodes (CCR) model. This model produces an efficiency frontier based on the concept of Pareto optimum under the assumption of constant return to scale. Later, Banker et al. (1984) developed the Banker-Charnes-Cooper (BCC) model that produces variable returns to scale efficiency frontier to measure the technical efficiency.

The use of both models allows the measurement of scale efficiency: for each production unit scale efficiency is the ratio between CCR and BCC efficiencies. Identical CCR and BCC results imply that the unit operates at an optimal scale. Main problem of non-parametric approaches is to find out the corresponding weights by using linear programming in order to maximize the ratio. To determine the efficiency of  $s$  units  $s$  linear programming problems must be solved to obtain the value of the weights ( $c_j$ ) associated with inputs ( $x_j$ ), as well as the value of weights ( $p_j$ ) associated with outputs ( $y_j$ ). Assuming  $m$  inputs and  $n$  outputs and transforming the fractional programming model into a linear programming model (Diaz-Balteiro et al. 2006). Let the unit  $k$  to be evaluated on any trial be designated as unit  $o$  where  $o$  ranges over  $1, 2 \dots s$ . The input orientated CCR model [2] can be formulated as follows (Charnes et al. 1978; Cooper et al. 2003):

$$\begin{aligned} & \max p_1 y_{1,o} + \dots + p_n y_{n,o} \\ & \text{subject to:} \\ & c_1 x_{1,o} + \dots + c_m x_{m,o} = 1 \\ & p_1 y_{1,k} + \dots + p_n y_{n,k} - c_1 x_{1,k} - \dots - c_m x_{m,k} \leq 0 \quad (k = 1 \dots s) \quad [2] \\ & c_1, c_2, \dots, c_m \geq 0 \\ & p_1, p_2, \dots, p_n \geq 0 \end{aligned}$$

The input orientated BCC model [3] has following form (Banker et al. 1984; Cooper et al. 2003), where  $p_o$  is the variable allowing identification of the nature of the returns of scale. This model does not predetermine if the value of this variable is positive (increasing returns) or is negative (decreasing returns):

$$\begin{aligned} & \max p_1 y_{1,o} + \dots + p_n y_{n,o} - p_o \\ \text{subject to:} & \\ & c_1 x_{1,o} + \dots + c_m x_{m,o} = 1 \\ & p_1 y_{1,k} + \dots + p_n y_{n,k} - c_1 x_{1,k} - \dots - c_m x_{m,k} - p_o \leq 0 \quad (k=1 \dots s) \quad [3] \\ & c_1, c_2, \dots, c_m \geq 0 \\ & p_1, p_2, \dots, p_n \geq 0 \end{aligned}$$

The outcome of DEA models is an efficiency score equals to one for efficient units and less than one for inefficient units. So, for inefficient units a ranking is given but for efficient ones no ranking can be given (Azizi et al. 2007). In non-parametric methods many units are calculated as efficient. To rank the relative efficient units, Andersen & Petersen (1993) developed a modified DEA model. Basic idea of this model is the exclusion of the evaluated unit from the analysis, it is excluded from the constraints. The unit under evaluation is being compared with linear combination of all other analysed units and efficiency can be higher than one (so called “*superefficiency*”). Modified model from Andersen & Petersen (1993) is otherwise identical with CCR- and BCC-model. More detail reviews of the DEA methodology are presented by Charnes et al. 1978; Banker et al. 1984; Seiford & Trall 1990; Ali & Seiford 1993; Cooper et al. 2003; Sengupta 2003.

Determining appropriate returns to scale is crucial for logging businesses to retain and enhance their competitiveness. Evidence regarding the nature of returns to scale in logging industry is mixed. Several studies suggested increasing returns to scale in this industry, whereas others indicated decreasing returns to scale. However, literature on returns to scale in the logging industry is limited (Stuart et al. 2010). Therefore both, the CCR- and the BCC-models were applied in this analysis to decompose the total efficiency and to evaluate the scale efficiency. The input-oriented models have been chosen, because inputs can be altered by management decisions and it is more difficult at outputs in forestry.

The calculation of the overall efficiency was performed by using computer program EMS. This program is able to compute the overall efficiency by input-, output- and non-orientated DEA models under assumption of constant, variable, non-increasing and non-decreasing return to scale (Scheel 2000). It is also able to compute the superefficiency via a modified model from Andersen & Petersen (1993). Overall efficiency of individual countries was further analysed according to other into analysis not included variables such as state of the economy and regional characteristics. This process is known as two stage approach (Timmer 1971).

## 2.2. Statistical testing of differences in efficiency

Testing of efficiency differences between the single groups of the countries was carried out by non-parametric statistical tests, because sample size was less than 50 and these tests do not require normal distribution function.

Their disadvantage is the lower power of the statistical test. Statistical testing of difference significance was done by Mann-Whitney U test (in case of two independent interval and binary variables) and by Kruskal-Wallis test (in case of independent interval and nominal variables)<sup>1</sup>.

Null hypothesis (there are no differences between the samples to be tested) and alternative hypothesis (there are significant differences in efficiency of the samples) were defined. Significant level was  $\alpha = 0.05$ . If the  $p$  value was less than the chosen significance level, then the null hypothesis was rejected and the alternative hypothesis was accepted. Statistical tests were done by program Statistika CZ, version 9.

## 2.3. Models being proposed

One basic and two modified models (labour and wood sale) were proposed, based on available input and output data. The task of the *basic model* was an overall efficiency comparison of input-output transformation. All variables are recorded in monetary units and as the inputs were chosen: *intermediate consumption* ( $I_1$ ), *compensation of employees* ( $I_2$ ), *fixed capital consumption*, *other taxes on production*, *interests and rents paid* ( $I_3$ ), and as the output: *total output of the forestry*, *other subsidies on production and interest receivable* ( $O$ ).

Labour input is still important indicator of forestry intensity, therefore the *labour model* was proposed, where the input ( $I_2$ ) was recorded in technical units (number of employees). Through comparison of the basic model to the labour model, the labour productivity in technical units partially can be assessed and we can respond to the question of the influence of the staff compensation on the efficiency in individual countries.

In the *wood sale model* the output were divided into two parts: revenues from wood sale ( $O_1$ ) and other revenues ( $O_2$ ). In first variant [wood sale model 1] the wood sale was expressed in cubic metres and in the second variant [wood sale model 2] all variables were recorded in monetary units. Based on comparison of these two variants, the question of successful timber trade can be evaluated.

## 2.4. Data source

The results of Integrated Environmental and Economic Accounts for Forests (IEEAF) from Eurostat database were used as a data source. The question is whether all countries applied the rules of IEEAF; therefore the data was transformed according to rules of Economic Accounts for Forestry (EAF). The sample size was 22 countries (as decision making units) and data for 2005–

<sup>1</sup> According to the type of variables it is possible to use One-Way ANOVA, but for non-normal data it is more suitable to use also non-parametric tests such as Kruskal-Wallis H test (Rimarčík 2007).

**Table 1.** Main features of variables included in the analysis.

| Variable   | Unit                          | Mean   | Standard deviation | Min   | Max    |
|--|-------------------------------|--------|--------------------|-------|--------|
| Intermediate consumption   | (€/hectare)                   | 104.88 | 90.06              | 5.56  | 317.36 |
| Average labour input   | (No. of empl./ 1000 hectares) | 5.49   | 4.41               | 0.71  | 20.86  |
| Compensation of employees  | (€/hectare)                   | 64.98  | 53.30              | 5.04  | 214.34 |
| Fixed capital consumption, other taxes on production, interests and rents paid | (€/hectare)                   | 32.56  | 30.62              | 0.12  | 125.30 |
| Total output of the forestry   | (€/hectare)                   | 234.63 | 168.79             | 22.95 | 535.80 |
| Wood sale  | (m <sup>3</sup> /hectare)     | 3.36   | 1.74               | 0.33  | 6.74   |
| Revenues from wood sale  | (€/hectare)                   | 138.70 | 97.94              | 8.73  | 383.82 |
| Other revenues   | (€/hectare)                   | 95.94  | 117.09             | 4.74  | 474.45 |

2008 was processed. All monetary values were expressed in euros; therefore no transformation from national currencies to euros was needed. Of course it is necessary to take in account the limited validity and consistency of the data, which may restrict the significance of results. Within the efficiency assessment in forestry is needed to avoid the extreme values and to include required number of units to be evaluated. Therefore five-year averages from 2005 to 2008 were calculated for each input and output variables. In this way, the value variation typical for the forestry sector was eliminated through the calculation of the mean, whereby the financial data were corrected by the country specific inflation (Harmonised Index of Consumer Prices – HICP) before calculating mean value. All input's and output's values were reduced by extension of the forests available for wood supply – FAWS (European Commission 2009). In this way, it is possible to compare this data per hectare as well as other indicators of IEEAF or EAF directly. Input data files were prepared in MS Excel. Main features of the variables included in the analysis are presented in Table 1.

### 3. Results

#### 3.1. Results of the basic model

By the CCR model, the average technical efficiency is 76.51%: Efficient countries are: Austria, Bulgaria, Finland, Greece, Hungary, Poland, Sweden and Spain. By the BCC model, these countries are also efficient: Switzerland, Germany, Italy, Netherlands and Czech Republic. The average efficiency is 85.47%. When applying the BCC model, more countries are efficient meaning that the models with variable returns to scale do systematically yield higher scores in comparison to the models under assumption of constant return to scale. Average scale efficiency is 82% (Table 2).

**Table 2.** Efficiency of the forestry in European countries – basic model.

| Country        | CCR    | R  | BCC    | R  | SE     | RTS |
|----------------|--------|----|--------|----|--------|-----|
| Slovakia       | 54.35% | 18 | 62.68% | 19 | 86.71% | DRS |
| Austria        | 100%   | 7  | 100%   | 7  | 100%   | CRS |
| Bulgaria       | 100%   | 4  | 100%   | 8  | 100%   | CRS |
| Switzerland    | 47.30% | 20 | 100%   | 1  | 47.30% | DRS |
| Cyprus         | 23.16% | 22 | 31.72% | 22 | 73.01% | IRS |
| Germany        | 68.95% | 14 | 100%   | 13 | 68.95% | DRS |
| Finland        | 100%   | 6  | 100%   | 10 | 100%   | CRS |
| France         | 60.08% | 16 | 63.11% | 18 | 95.20% | DRS |
| Greece         | 100%   | 3  | 100%   | 3  | 100%   | CRS |
| Hungary        | 100%   | 2  | 100%   | 4  | 100%   | CRS |
| Italy          | 99.95% | 9  | 100%   | 12 | 99.95% | IRS |
| Lithuania      | 65.07% | 15 | 65.56% | 17 | 99.25% | IRS |
| Netherlands    | 57.76% | 17 | 100%   | 9  | 57.76% | DRS |
| Norway         | 69.79% | 13 | 78.01% | 16 | 89.46% | IRS |
| Portugal       | 85.05% | 10 | 88.77% | 14 | 95.81% | DRS |
| Romania        | 53.62% | 19 | 55.26% | 21 | 97.03% | DRS |
| Slovenia       | 78.62% | 11 | 79.37% | 15 | 99.06% | IRS |
| Great Britain  | 41.66% | 21 | 55.84% | 20 | 74.61% | DRS |
| Poland         | 100%   | 1  | 100%   | 2  | 100%   | CRS |
| Czech Republic | 77.81% | 12 | 100%   | 6  | 77.81% | DRS |
| Sweden         | 100%   | 8  | 100%   | 11 | 100%   | CRS |
| Spain          | 100%   | 5  | 100%   | 5  | 100%   | CRS |

Where: CCR – efficiency by the CCR-model, R – ranking based on superefficiency, BCC – efficiency by the BCC-model, SE – scale efficiency, RTS – return to scale, DRS – decreasing returns to scale, IRS – increasing returns to scale, CRS – constant returns to scale.

#### 3.2. Target values

As it was mentioned, Data Envelopment analysis is based on linear programming and this fact allows of calculating the target values of inputs (in case of input orientated models) or outputs (in case of output orientated models) for each inefficient DMU. Target values for Slovakia are shown in Table 3. From the target values follows that all inputs should be lowered about 46% according to CCR- model and about 36% according to BCC-model to be efficient. It means the reducing the labour cost from 128 mil.€ to app. 64 mil.€, or to app. 64 mil.€, respectively.

**Table 3.** Target values of inputs for Slovakia by basic model.

|                            | I <sub>1</sub> | I <sub>2</sub> | I <sub>3</sub> | Efficiency % |
|----------------------------|----------------|----------------|----------------|--------------|
|                            | €/hectare      |                |                |              |
| Actual values              | 135.0          | 77.5           | 52.1           | —            |
| Target values by CCR model | 73.4           | 42.3           | 28.4           | 54.35        |
| Change in %                | -46            | -46            | -46            | —            |
| Target values by BCC model | 86.6           | 49.5           | 33.1           | 62.68        |
| Change in %                | -36            | -36            | -36            | —            |

Where: I<sub>1</sub> – intermediate consumption; I<sub>2</sub> – compensation of employees; I<sub>3</sub> – fixed capital consumption, other taxes on production, interests and rents paid.

### 3.3. Labour productivity

Labour input is still important indicator of forestry intensity and also consequential cost item. Labour cost and number of employees per hectare vary in evaluated countries.

If we compare results of basic and labour model, it is possible to consider labour productivity and level of employee's compensation in individual countries. In general, labour productivity is measured as a ratio of output to the labour input (hour worked, numbers of employees or labour cost). Based on this comparison it is feasible to divide the countries into three groups. In first group are the countries, in which the technical productivity of labour is higher than economic; it means compensation of employees influences the efficiency negatively and do not correspond to technical productivity of labour. Switzerland, Germany, Netherlands, United Kingdom and Czech Republic are included in the first group. In the second group, the technical and economic labour productivity are the same. In this group are Cyprus, Finland, Greece, Italy, Poland Sweden and Spain. The third group is created from countries, in which the efficiency of the technical model is lower than economic model and it means there is room for higher wages at the comparable efficiency level. It is the biggest group: Slovakia, Austria, Bulgaria, France, Hungary, Lithuania, Norway, Portugal, Romania and Slovenia. Countries with economy in transition (except Poland and Czech Republic) belong to the third group.

### 3.4. Wood sale

Forestry receives majority of its incomes from the sale of wood and timber in most countries. The share of income from timber sales in this sample is around 76% and there are great differences in single countries. The share ranges from 53% in Netherlands to 95% in Lithuania. Based on results of this model and its variants, the question of successful timber trade can be valued.

### 3.5. Efficiency according to the regional typology

Individual countries have different conditions concerning production characteristics (forest characteristics, forest types, intensity of production regimes, technology and so on), consumption characteristics (type and size of industry), general regional characteristics and other political, environmental, and social factors (Rametsteiner et al. 2006). They introduce and more in detail describe 7 regional types: globalized regions (Nordic–Baltic region), wood production oriented regions (Central Europe), plantation-oriented regions (Western Europe), broader, multifunctional forestry oriented regions (Western Europe), urban society service influenced regions (North-western Europe), countries in transition (Eastern Europe), low forest management intensity regions (Southern Europe).

**Table 4.** Efficiency of the forestry in European countries – labour model.

| Country        | Technical variant |    |         |    |         | Economic variant |    |         |    |         |
|----------------|-------------------|----|---------|----|---------|------------------|----|---------|----|---------|
|                | CCR               | R  | BCC     | R  | SE      | CCR              | R  | BCC     | R  | SE      |
| Slovakia       | 44.13%            | 17 | 62.51%  | 16 | 70.60%  | 54.35%           | 18 | 62.68%  | 19 | 86.71%  |
| Austria        | 83.97%            | 9  | 100.00% | 5  | 83.97%  | 100.00%          | 7  | 100.00% | 7  | 100.00% |
| Bulgaria       | 38.76%            | 20 | 43.17%  | 19 | 89.78%  | 100.00%          | 4  | 100.00% | 8  | 100.00% |
| Switzerland    | 52.44%            | 15 | 100.00% | 1  | 52.44%  | 47.30%           | 20 | 100.00% | 1  | 47.30%  |
| Cyprus         | 23.16%            | 22 | 31.72%  | 22 | 73.01%  | 23.16%           | 22 | 31.72%  | 22 | 73.01%  |
| Germany        | 90.73%            | 7  | 100.00% | 11 | 90.73%  | 68.95%           | 14 | 100.00% | 13 | 68.95%  |
| Finland        | 100.00%           | 5  | 100.00% | 8  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 6  | 100.00% | 10 | 100.00% |
| France         | 58.85%            | 14 | 65.15%  | 14 | 90.33%  | 60.08%           | 16 | 63.11%  | 18 | 95.20%  |
| Greece         | 100.00%           | 3  | 100.00% | 3  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 3  | 100.00% | 3  | 100.00% |
| Hungary        | 35.52%            | 21 | 38.74%  | 21 | 91.69%  | 100.00%          | 2  | 100.00% | 4  | 100.00% |
| Italy          | 99.95%            | 6  | 100.00% | 10 | 99.95%  | 99.95%           | 9  | 100.00% | 12 | 99.95%  |
| Lithuania      | 42.34%            | 19 | 42.38%  | 20 | 99.91%  | 65.07%           | 15 | 65.56%  | 17 | 99.25%  |
| Netherlands    | 85.59%            | 8  | 100.00% | 7  | 85.59%  | 57.76%           | 17 | 100.00% | 9  | 57.76%  |
| Norway         | 58.88%            | 13 | 88.92%  | 12 | 66.22%  | 69.79%           | 13 | 78.01%  | 16 | 89.46%  |
| Portugal       | 63.56%            | 11 | 88.77%  | 13 | 71.60%  | 85.05%           | 10 | 88.77%  | 14 | 95.81%  |
| Romania        | 48.17%            | 16 | 55.26%  | 18 | 87.17%  | 53.62%           | 19 | 55.26%  | 21 | 97.03%  |
| Slovenia       | 62.97%            | 12 | 64.12%  | 15 | 98.21%  | 78.62%           | 11 | 79.37%  | 15 | 99.06%  |
| Great Britain  | 43.09%            | 18 | 55.84%  | 17 | 77.17%  | 41.66%           | 21 | 55.84%  | 20 | 74.61%  |
| Poland         | 100.00%           | 1  | 100.00% | 2  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 1  | 100.00% | 2  | 100.00% |
| Czech republic | 78.63%            | 10 | 100.00% | 9  | 78.63%  | 77.81%           | 12 | 100.00% | 6  | 77.81%  |
| Sweden         | 100.00%           | 4  | 100.00% | 6  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 8  | 100.00% | 11 | 100.00% |
| Spain          | 100.00%           | 2  | 100.00% | 4  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 5  | 100.00% | 5  | 100.00% |

Where: CCR – efficiency by the CCR-model, R – ranking based on superefficiency, BCC – efficiency by the BCC-model, SE – scale efficiency, RS – return to scale, DRS – decreasing returns to scale, IRS – increasing returns to scale, CRS – constant returns to scale.

**Table 5.** Efficiency of the forestry in European countries – wood sale model.

| Country        | Technical variant |    |         |    |         | Economic variant |    |         |    |         |
|----------------|-------------------|----|---------|----|---------|------------------|----|---------|----|---------|
|                | CCR               | R  | BCC     | R  | SE      | CCR              | R  | BCC     | R  | SE      |
| Slovakia       | 55.73%            | 18 | 78.29%  | 18 | 71.18%  | 62.17%           | 17 | 69.48%  | 18 | 89.48%  |
| Austria        | 85.09%            | 13 | 100.00% | 10 | 85.09%  | 100.00%          | 7  | 100.00% | 1  | 100.00% |
| Bulgaria       | 100.00%           | 5  | 100.00% | 7  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 5  | 100.00% | 9  | 100.00% |
| Switzerland    | 51.92%            | 20 | 69.42%  | 19 | 74.79%  | 53.00%           | 20 | 100.00% | 2  | 53.00%  |
| Cyprus         | 25.59%            | 22 | 43.09%  | 22 | 59.39%  | 24.78%           | 22 | 43.09%  | 22 | 57.51%  |
| Germany        | 61.40%            | 17 | 100.00% | 12 | 61.40%  | 78.52%           | 15 | 100.00% | 12 | 78.52%  |
| Finland        | 100.00%           | 10 | 100.00% | 13 | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 9  | 100.00% | 13 | 100.00% |
| France         | 55.02%            | 19 | 59.25%  | 21 | 92.86%  | 61.33%           | 18 | 63.42%  | 19 | 96.70%  |
| Greece         | 100.00%           | 4  | 100.00% | 4  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 4  | 100.00% | 6  | 100.00% |
| Hungary        | 100.00%           | 2  | 100.00% | 5  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 2  | 100.00% | 7  | 100.00% |
| Italy          | 97.79%            | 11 | 100.00% | 14 | 97.79%  | 100.00%          | 11 | 100.00% | 14 | 100.00% |
| Lithuania      | 100.00%           | 8  | 100.00% | 11 | 100.00% | 91.81%           | 12 | 100.00% | 15 | 91.81%  |
| Netherlands    | 100.00%           | 9  | 100.00% | 1  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 10 | 100.00% | 3  | 100.00% |
| Norway         | 76.04%            | 15 | 84.23%  | 16 | 90.28%  | 71.51%           | 16 | 78.15%  | 17 | 91.50%  |
| Portugal       | 100.00%           | 7  | 100.00% | 8  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 8  | 100.00% | 10 | 100.00% |
| Romania        | 71.71%            | 16 | 100.00% | 15 | 71.71%  | 55.51%           | 19 | 61.87%  | 20 | 89.72%  |
| Slovenia       | 81.73%            | 14 | 81.86%  | 17 | 99.84%  | 87.98%           | 14 | 93.28%  | 16 | 94.32%  |
| Great Britain  | 42.63%            | 21 | 59.93%  | 20 | 71.13%  | 41.83%           | 21 | 57.51%  | 21 | 72.74%  |
| Poland         | 100.00%           | 1  | 100.00% | 3  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 1  | 100.00% | 5  | 100.00% |
| Czech Republic | 86.88%            | 12 | 100.00% | 2  | 86.88%  | 89.56%           | 13 | 100.00% | 4  | 89.56%  |
| Sweden         | 100.00%           | 6  | 100.00% | 9  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 6  | 100.00% | 11 | 100.00% |
| Spain          | 100.00%           | 3  | 100.00% | 6  | 100.00% | 100.00%          | 3  | 100.00% | 8  | 100.00% |

Where: CCR – efficiency by the CCR-model, R – ranking based on superefficiency, BCC – efficiency by the BCC-model, SE – scale efficiency, RS – returns to scale, DRS – decreasing returns to scale, IRS – increasing returns to scale, CRS – constant returns to scale.

For purposes of this analysis, some regional types were integrated and slightly modified. Four groups were created based on this typology and the countries assigned: 1. regions dominated by restitution issues “countries in transition”<sup>2</sup>, regions dominated by low forest management intensity and with high importance of non-wood forest products<sup>3</sup>, regions with multifunctional forestry<sup>4</sup>, production regions based on plantations and globalized pulp and paper industry-orientated countries<sup>5</sup>. In this case non-parametric test for independent groups (Kruskal-Wallis H test) was used. The initial view would indicate that it is possible to see differences among individual groups, but they are not statistically significant in all cases. The most efficient were countries with low management intensity in basic and labour model and pulp and paper industry-orientated countries in wood sale models (Table 6).

### 3.6. Efficiency according to the state of economy

Another possibility is to divide the countries according to the state of their economy, into advanced countries and countries with economy in transition and then to analyse efficiency. In comparison of descriptive characteristics (mean, median, standard deviation, range and skewness) it is also possible to see differences (Table 7). The differences were not statistically significant in all models at the significant level  $\alpha = 0.05$ , except labour model and efficiency by BBC-model ( $p = 0.048$ ).

**Table 6.** Differences in efficiency among individual groups of countries.

| Efficiency – CCR model                       | n | Basic model | Labour model | Wood sale model 1 | Wood sale model 2 |
|--|---|-------------|--------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| Countries in transition                      | 5 | 81.59       | 53.32        | 85.49             | 83.54             |
| Countries with low management intensity      | 5 | 81.63       | 77.33        | 84.68             | 84.96             |
| Countries with multifunctional forestry      | 4 | 63.54       | 70.16        | 63.81             | 70.60             |
| Pulp and paper industry-orientated countries | 8 | 76.61       | 72.11        | 85.69             | 86.64             |
| $H(3, n=22)$                                 |   | 2.12        | 2.72         | 3.92              | 3.58              |
| $p$ value                                    |   | 0.547       | 0.437        | 0.271             | 0.311             |
| Efficiency – BCC model                       | n | Basic model | Labour model | Wood sale model 1 | Wood sale model 2 |
| Countries in transition                      | 5 | 83.59       | 59.94        | 95.66             | 86.27             |
| Countries with low management intensity      | 5 | 84.10       | 84.10        | 88.62             | 88.62             |
| Countries with multifunctional forestry      | 4 | 90.78       | 91.29        | 82.17             | 90.86             |
| Pulp and paper industry-orientated countries | 8 | 84.85       | 81.41        | 90.75             | 91.12             |
| $H(3, n=22)$                                 |   | 0.50        | 4.23         | 1.35              | 0.32              |
| $p$ value                                    |   | 0.919       | 0.237        | 0.718             | 0.956             |

Where: wood sale model 1 – technical variant, wood sale model 2 – economic variant.

<sup>2</sup>Slovakia, Hungary, Romania, Bulgaria, Poland.

<sup>3</sup>Greece, Italy, Spain, Portugal, Cyprus.

<sup>4</sup>Germany, France, Switzerland, Czech Republic.

<sup>5</sup>Finland, Sweden, Norway, United Kingdom, Netherlands, Austria, Slovenia.

**Table 7.** Differences in efficiency according to the state of economy.

| Efficiency – CCR model  | n  | Basic model | Labour model | Wood sale model 1 | Wood sale model 2 |
|-------------------------|----|-------------|--------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| Countries in transition | 8  | 78.68       | 56.32        | 87.01             | 85.88             |
| Advanced countries      | 14 | 75.26       | 75.73        | 78.25             | 80.78             |
| <i>p value</i>          |    | 0.811       | 0.076        | 0.495             | 0.946             |
| Efficiency – BCC model  | n  | Basic model | Labour model | Wood sale model 1 | Wood sale model 2 |
| Countries in transition | 8  | 82.86       | 63.27        | 95.02             | 90.58             |
| Advanced countries      | 14 | 86.96       | 87.89        | 86.85             | 88.73             |
| <i>p value</i>          |    | 0.585       | 0.048        | 0.539             | 0.891             |

Where: wood sale model 1 – technical variant, wood sale model 2 – economic variant.

## 4. Discussion

Experience with application of DEA has shown that it can be appropriate approach to efficiency evaluation and an alternative and completing method for performance measurements using other methods and approaches also. Obtained results show average efficiency in range of 69 – 90% (depending on the model). It was comparable to those in similar analysis using DEA in wood-based industry (Yin 1998, 1999; Kao 2000; Nyrud & Baardsen 2003; Diaz-Balteiro et al. 2006).

This paper is based on the best available data, but there are still uncertainties. Especially the limited validity and consistency of the data may restrict the significance of the results and it is also questionable to what extent are the national methodologies in applying either the Economic Accounts for Forestry or Integrated Environmental and Economic Accounts for Forests and their practical rules. Main problem of applying either the system of Economic Accounts for Forestry or system of Integrated Environmental and Economic Accounts for Forests is data availability at national level.

According to the first group, efficiency results are probably influenced by high social and health fund contribution and the resulting higher labour cost. Other reasons for differences between technical and economic models could be the insufficient application of new ecological technologies, small-scale forest ownership and the resulting effective forest property management, and so on. Important factor could be also the amount of intermediate consumption, in which various shares of forestry services in individual countries could be included.

The efficiency of the groups created according to regional classification is comparable to the index of globalization estimated by Rametsteiner et al. (2006), which was lowest in “countries in transition” and similar in other groups.

## 5. Conclusions

The purpose of this study was to determine to what extent the efficiency of Slovak forestry is different in comparison to other European countries. Based on the efficiency analysis, the following results can be concluded:

- There are great differences in efficiency among individual countries; it could be caused by different approaches to forest management, providing of forest services to public, supporting of forestry, share of public ownership, policy goals and other realities.
- Based on the results of the labour model it is feasible to divide the countries into three groups: in first group was the compensation of employees higher than the technical productivity of labour, in the second group these factors were the same or similar and in the third one was room for higher wages at the comparable efficiency.
- The state of economy (advanced countries and countries with economy in transition) and region do not have statistically significant influence on efficiency.
- Slovak forestry has achieved less than average efficiency in comparison to other European countries; main causes are probably: obsolete technologies, machines and devices used, lower utilization of harvester technologies, lower support from public sources, environmental and natural conditions, but on the other hand lower wages in Slovak forestry than in most EU countries influenced the efficiency in a positive way.

All conclusions are based on simplified analysis and valid for this sample. The results can be different for another sample size. It is connected with the main disadvantages of this method, which are: inclusion or exclusion of variables can affect the results significantly, the number of efficient firms on the frontier tends to increase with the number of inputs and output variables, Such analysis can be extended and modified according to specific conditions and requests.

## Acknowledgment

*This work was supported by the Slovak Research and Development Agency under research project “APVV-15-0487 Research on efficiency of forestry services outsourcing”. Author would like to thank Prof. Walter Sekot for his very useful comments. The author also would like to acknowledge the valuable comments provided by the reviewers of this manuscript which led to substantial improvement of the analysis.*



## References

- Ali, A. I., Seiford, L. M., 1993: The Mathematical Programming Approach to Efficiency Analysis. In: Fried, A. O., Lovell, C. A.K., Schmidt, S. S. (eds): *The Measurement of Productive Efficiency, Techniques and Applications*, Oxford University Press, New York, p. 120–159.
- Andersen, P., Petersen, N. C., 1993: A procedure for ranking efficient units in data envelopment analysis. *Management Science*, 39:1261–1271.
- Azizi, K. H., Lofti, F. H., Saati, S., Vahidi, A. R., 2007: Ranking the Electricity Producer Companies in View of Manpower Efficiency by DEA. *Applied Mathematical Sciences*, 1:761–768.
- Banker, R. D., Charnes, A., Cooper, W. W., 1984: Some models for estimating technical and scale inefficiency in data envelopment analysis. *Management Science*, 30:1078–1092.
- Bogetoft, P., Thorsen, J., Strange, N., 2003: Efficiency and merger gains in the Danish Forestry Extension Service. *Forest Science*, 49:585–595.
- Charnes, A., Cooper, W.W., Rhodes, E., 1978: Measuring the Efficiency of Decision Making Units. *European Journal of Operational Research*, 3:429–444.
- Cooper, W. W., Seiford, L. M., Tone, K., 2003: *Data Envelopment Analysis: a Comprehensive text with Models, Applications, References and DEA-Solver Software*. Kluwer Academic Publ., Boston, 318 p.
- Diaz-Balteiro, L., Herruzo, A. C., Mertinez, M., Pachón, J. G., 2006: An analysis of productive efficiency and innovation activity using DEA: An application to Spain's wood-based industry. *Forest Policy and Economics*, 8:762–773.
- European Commission, 2009: *Forestry statistics, Eurostat Pocketbooks 2009 Edition*, Luxembourg: Publications Office of the European Union, 172 p.
- Hanninen, H., Viitala, E. J., 1998: Efficiency of Non-profit Forestry Extension Services: An Application of DEA. *Forest Research Institute*.
- Hoffmann, Ch., 2006: *Die Data Envelopment Analysis (DEA) und ihre Anwendungsmöglichkeiten zur vergleichenden Effizienzanalyse im Forstwesen*, University of Natural Resources and Applied Life Sciences in Vienna, Dissertation, 299 p.
- Hoffmann, Ch., Sekot, W., 2004: *Anwendungspotentiale der Data Envelopment Analysis (DEA) zur Effizienzbewertung in der Forstwirtschaft. Zwischenbericht zum Projekt*, University of Natural Resources and Applied Life Sciences in Vienna, 20 p.
- Kao, C., 2000: Measuring the Performance Improvement of Taiwan Forests after Reorganization. *Forest Science*, 46:577–584.
- Kao, C., Yang, Y. C., 1991: Measuring the Efficiency of Forest Management. *Forest Science*, 37:1239–1252.
- Kao, C., Yang, Y. C., 1992: Reorganization of forest districts via efficiency measurement. *European Journal of Operational Research*, 58:356–362.
- Kovalčík, M., 2007. Porovnanie efektívnosti lesných podnikov podľa Data Envelopment Analysis a Cost Benefit Analysis (Comparison of forest enterprises efficiency by using Data Envelopment Analysis and Cost Benefit Analysis). In: *Financovanie 2007 Lesy – Drevo*, Proceedings from international conference, Technical university Zvolen, 7 p.
- Le Bel, L., 1996: Performance and efficiency evaluation of logging contractors using Data Envelopment Analysis. Blacksburg, VA: Virginia Polytechnic and State University. Dissertation, 201 p.
- LeBel, L. G., Stuart, W. B., 1998. Technical efficiency evaluation of logging contractors using a nonparametric model. *Journal of Forest Engineering*, 9:15–24.
- Liu, Ch., 2005: Measuring the relative efficiency and reorganization – The example of CDFAs of the NAN-TOU County in Taiwan, *Economics Bulletin*, 17:1–11.
- Nyrud, A., Baardsen, S., 2003: Production efficiency and productivity growth in Norwegian sawmilling. *Forest Science*, 49:89–97.
- Oesten, G., Roeder, A., 2001: *Management von Forstbetrieben. Band 1*, Verlag Dr. Kessel, Freiburg, 365 p.
- Rametsteiner, E., Nilsson, S., Böttcher, H., Havlik, P., Kraxner, F., Leduc, S. et al., 2006: Study of the Effects of Globalization on the Economic Viability of EU Forestry. EC Contract No.30-CE-009757/00-89, International Institute for Applied Systems Analysis, 198 p.
- Rimarčík, M., 2007: *Štatistika pre prax*. 200 p.
- Saastamoinen, O., Matero, J., 2006: *Introduction to forestry, forest policy and economics*. University of Joensuu, 93 p.
- Scheel, H., 2000: *Effizienzmaße der Data Envelopment Analysis*. Deutscher Universitätsverlag, Gabler Edition Wissenschaft, Wiesbaden, 183 p.
- Schefczyk, M., Gerpott, T. J., 1994: Operativer und Finanzieller Erfolg von LVU. In: *Zeitschrift für Betriebswirtschaft*, 64:933–957.
- Sekot, W., Hoffmann, Ch., 2007: Extension of interfirm comparison of forest enterprises by means of Data Envelopment Analysis. *Austrian Journal of Forest Science*, 124:37–64.
- Sengupta, J. K., 2003: *New Efficiency Theory, with applications of Data Envelopment Analysis*. Springer Verlag Berlin Heidelberg, 176 p.
- Seiford, L. M., Thrall, R. M., 1990: Recent development in DEA: the mathematical programming approach to frontier analysis. *Journal of Econometrics*, 46:7–38.
- Shiba, M., 1997. Measuring the efficiency of managerial and technical performances in forestry activities by means of Data Envelopment Analysis (DEA). *Journal of Forest Engineering*, 8:7–19.
- Sowlati, T., 2005: Efficiency studies in forestry using data envelopment analysis. *Forest Products Journal*, 55:49–57.

- Timmer, C. P., 1971: Using a Probabilistic Frontier Production to Measure Technical Efficiency. *Journal of Political Economy*, 79:776–794.
- Yin, R., 1998: DEA: A new methodology for evaluating the performance of forest products producers. *Forest Production Journal*, 48:29–34.
- Yin, R., 1999: Production efficiency and cost competitiveness of pulp producers in the Pacific Rim. *Forest Production Journal*, 49:44–49.

# Communities of woody vegetation and wood destroying fungi in natural and semi-natural forests of Kyiv city, Ukraine

Olena Blinkova<sup>1\*</sup>, Oleksandra Ivanenko<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>National University of Life and Environmental Sciences of Ukraine, 03041, Kyiv, 15, Heroyiv Oborony st., Ukraine

<sup>2</sup>Institute for evolutionary ecology of the National Academy of Sciences of Ukraine, 03143, Kyiv, 37, Lebedeva st., Ukraine

---

## Abstract

Selected forestry parameters were investigated in the system of trees and wood-destroying fungi in the natural forests of the Kyiv city on a gradient of recreational transformation. We investigated the vitality, age compositions, and health condition of woody plants (11 species), and species, systematic, trophic and spatial compositions of xylophilic fungi (51 species, 224 findings of xylophilic fungi representing 34 genera, 20 families, 7 orders of divisions Basidiomycota; class Agaricomycetes). The results showed that communities of woody vegetation and xylophilic fungi in forests depend on the degree of recreational transformation of the environment. Vitality, age compositions and health condition of trees altered species composition of xylophilic fungi.

**Key words:** consortium relation; natural forests; woody plants; xylophilic fungi

---

Editor: Magdalena Kacprzyk

---

## 1. Introduction

Communities of woody vegetation and wood-destroying (xylophilic) fungi of forest ecosystem play significant role in issue of evolutionary ecology. The actuality of the objects is stipulated by the core role of forests in biosphere stability, preservation of landscape and especially biotic variety (Mirkin & Naumova 1998). Xylophilic fungi are decomposers, obligatory components of woody vegetation. Xylomycobiota shows the high sensitivity to environmental changes (Schmidt 2006). In other cases, they cause of root and stem rot, negatively affect the health condition of trees. Due to this, the study of communities of these organisms in phytocoenoses of natural origin is expedient. Problems of relationship between the communities of woody vegetation and wood-destroying fungi in urban conditions have long attracted the attention of scientists. The composition of xylophilic fungi is a reflection of parameters of natural forest development and state, which evidences the unity of components at all hierarchic levels of their inter-links. In the phytocoenoses, which are not durable for anthropogenic or natural reasons, the resistance of biota species to negative influence is significantly diminished and in general, the attrition of the weakest plants and the reformation of species composition and ecosystem structures increases (Arefev 2010).

Thus, the communities of woody vegetation and xylophilic fungi is an important basis for correct indicating the state of forest ecosystems, has not been sufficiently studied so far. This concerns the necessity of complex analysis of evolutionally formed consortium relation between woody vegetation and xylophilic fungi. The compositions of xylophilic fungi and woody vegetation are reflection of parameters of artificial phytocoenoses' development and state (Blinkova & Ivanenko 2014, 2016). Due to the impact of urbanization on natural ecosystems, forests in Kyiv have undergone an intensive recreational transformation, which is manifested in breach of structural and functional integrity of phytocoenoses' organisation. This in turn essentially affects the functioning of communities of the dominant woody species and xylophilic fungi in urban ecosystem. It is also notable that there is few data on communities of wood-destroying fungi and woody vegetation from the territory of natural and semi-natural forests of Kyiv. The aim of the study was to describe communities of woody vegetation and xylomyco-complex of natural and semi-natural forests in urban conditions depending on the degree of recreational transformation of the environment.

---

\*Corresponding author. Olena Blinkova, e-mail: [elena.blinkova@gmail.com](mailto:elena.blinkova@gmail.com), phone: +38 0637 413 247

## 2. Materials and methods

### 2.1. Study site

Communities of trees and xylotrophic fungi in the urban conditions of Kyiv were studied in natural and semi-natural forests belonging to the nature reserve fund of Ukraine (Table 1). The forests were selected for the analyses since human impact is maximised in these objects. Kyiv is located on the right and left banks of the Dnipro river at the border between the Forest-Steppe zone and the Polissya of Ukraine following the geo-botanical division of Ukraine. The area of the city is 835.6 km<sup>2</sup>, of which 31.300 ha are natural and semi-natural forests. The average annual temperature over the period 2014–2015 was 8.6 °C. The vegetation season (> 5 °C) lasted 204 days and started on April 10. The climate is of a semi-continental type for the Forest-Steppe zone. The geomorphologic structure of Kyiv belongs to 3 geomorphologic zones: South Polissya, Dnipro, Azov-Dnipro (Bilyk 1977). Soddy-podzolic soils, gray forest soils and sod meadow soils are the main soil types in Kyiv (Gavrilyuk 1956). In the survey conducted 15–30 September 2015 we distinguished four localities of forests in Kyiv city (Table 1).

### 2.2. Description of methods

Within each studied forests, the mapping of dominant tree vegetation was carried out on experimental plots (EP1-EP4). The experimental plots that are representative of the forests were chosen by reconnaissance method of study. Each experimental plot was established according to detailed route-method of study (Dilis 1974; Vasi-

levich 1992; Mirkin 1998). The area of each experimental plot was 0.5–0.7 ha. Taking into account basic characteristics of recreational changes of elements of structural and functional organization of forests in Kyiv EP was divided according to the degree of the recreational transformation rate from minimal to maximal consequences. In general, the stages of recreational transformation were appraised according to Rysin (2003; Table 2).

#### 2.2.1 Tree health conditions assessment and vitality structure

The health condition of trees (category of state trees) was appraised in accordance with the Sanitary Forest Regulation in Ukraine (2016). In order to avoid the influence of the irregular intensity of silvicultural practice upon the index of stand state, for each category of states the weighted average Kraft classes (WAKC; vitality composition of tree vegetation) was calculated as the sum of the number of trees of each Kraft class was multiplied by stand state index (I–V), divided by the total number trees in a certain category of state (Eytungen 1949). For each stand, forest mensuration parameters were estimated: age (A); average weighted diameter ( $D_{ave}$ ), height ( $H_{ave}$ ), fluctuations range ( $D_{min} - D_{max}$ ;  $H_{min} - H_{max}$ ) and standard deviation (S.D.), stand density (N), stand basal area as a sum of tree areas ( $G_n$ ). Morpho-metric parameters were calculated by an optical altimeter Suunto PM-5 and callipers Waldmeister 100 alu. Mechanical damaged woody plants were the trees and bushes that have cut or sawn live branch, injure on the stem reaching cambium or prominent features of such damage independent of time such were inflicted.

**Table 1.** General characteristics of studied forests.

| No. EP* | Name of tract   | GPS coordinates             | Year established | Affiliation to the nature reserve fund                      | Area [ha] | Dominant tree vegetation  |
|---------|-----------------|-----------------------------|------------------|---|-----------|---|
| 1       | Holosivskiy lis | 50°22'01''N,<br>30°30'30''E | 2007             | National Natural Park "Holosivskiy"                         | 1879.43   | <i>Acer platanoides</i> L., <i>Carpinus betulus</i> L., <i>Quercus robur</i> L., <i>Tilia cordata</i> Mill., <i>Ulmus glabra</i> Huds.                            |
| 2       | Teremky         | 50°21'40''N,<br>30°27'15''E | 2007             | National Natural Park "Holosivskiy"                         | 93.8      | <i>Carpinus betulus</i> L., <i>Prunus avium</i> L., <i>Quercus robur</i> L.   |
| 3       | Lysa Hora       | 50°23'42''N,<br>30°32'53''E | 1994             | Historical and cultural monument-museum "Kyivska fortetsia" | 137.1     | <i>Acer campestre</i> L., <i>A. platanoides</i> L., <i>Carpinus betulus</i> L., <i>Fraxinus excelsior</i> L., <i>Quercus robur</i> L., <i>Tilia cordata</i> Mill. |
| 4       | Bila dibrova    | 50°54'68''N,<br>30°67'22''E | 1978             | Reserve of local importance "Bila dibrova"                  | 3.0       | <i>Acer platanoides</i> L., <i>Betula pendula</i> Roth, <i>Pinus sylvestris</i> L., <i>Prunus avium</i> L., <i>Quercus robur</i> L., <i>Sambucus nigra</i> L.     |

\*The location of experimental plots.

**Table 2.** Stages of recreational digression establishment.

| Digression stage | State of  |   |                         |
|------------------|---|---|-------------------------|
|                  | Herbaceous cover and leaf-litter  | Tree stratum and undergrowth  | Soil surface            |
| 1                | full species composition of herbaceous plant, projective cover is 90–100%, leaf-litter is not broken                              | trees are healthy, undergrowth is numerous and different ages                                   | I stage of digression   |
| 2                | appearance of ruderal, pratal herbaceous species, projective cover is 80–90%, leaf-litter begins to trample down                  | trees are weakened, undergrowth is numerous but not different ages                              | II stage of digression  |
| 3                | share of ruderal, pratal herbaceous species is 5–10%, projective cover is 70–80%, leaf-litter is trample down                     | trees are weakened or heavily weakened, undergrowth is limited                                  | III stage of digression |
| 4                | share of ruderal or pratal herbaceous species is 10–20%, projective cover is 50–70%, leaf-litter begins to deteriorate            | trees are heavily weakened, low viability of undergrowth is located clumps                      | IV stage of digression  |
| 5                | share of ruderal or pratal herbaceous species are dominating species, projective cover is 0–50%, leaf-litter is completely absent | trees are heavily weakened or wilting with significant mechanical damage, undergrowth is absent | V stage of digression   |

### 2.2.2 Soil surface layer and herbaceous cover assessment

The state of soil surface layer was showed according to the following categories: 1 – undisturbed soil; 2 – weakened mulch (single passes); 3 – footpath in mulch; 4 – footpath or road without mulch; 5 – footpath or road with washaways; 6 – deposition and washaways made by recreants descending on steep slopes. The stages of digression of soil surface layer were the following: I – under which the 3<sup>rd</sup>, 4<sup>th</sup>, 5<sup>th</sup> and 6<sup>th</sup> categories of disturbance cover up to 2% of the area of experimental plot; II – from 2% to 10% of area; III – 10% – 25% of area; IV – 26% – 40% of area; V – over 40% of the site area (Polyakov 2009). Clogging of solid waste of the soil surface was defined as the share clogging area of the total area of the experimental plot.

As for herbaceous cover taxa nomenclature was adopted according to Cherepanov (1995). The species composition and total projective cover of dominant herbaceous plants was determined.

### 2.2.3 Data collection and determination of fungi

According to Arefev (2010) the measuring unit is a host tree, on which carpophores of certain fungi species were detected. The collection of factual evidence was carried out during the period of visible growth and formation of carpophores of xylotrophic fungi in the vegetation period. Every detected species was photographed. Photographs were taken with Nikon Coolpix L830 digital camera. The species that were easily identified “in oculo nudo” and did not require additional micro-morphological studies were not included in exsiccates. The determination of fungi species was assessed with the methods of Cléménçon (2009), Koukol et al. (2014). The scientific names of fungi and their macrosystems are according to MycoBank (Robert et al. 2005). Author’s names of species of fungi are according to Kirk & Ansell (1992).

### 2.2.4 Assessment of trophic and spatial compositions of fungi

Analysis of trophic composition of xylomycobiota was done by the distribution of wood destroying fungi by trees. We distinguished four trophic groups of xylo-trophs: eurytrophes of II rank (consorts of coniferous and deciduous trees), eurytrophes of II rank on coniferous trees, eurytrophes of II rank on deciduous trees and stenotrophes (consorts of only one genus of woody plants). The dead substrate of the host tree of xylo-trophic fungi was divided into deadwood, falling wood (branches and stems) and stump depending on the morpho-metric parameters. Analysis of spatial composition of xylomycobiota was effected by the distribution of wood destroying fungi by root, ground, boot, stem and photosynthesising myco-horizons (Blinkova & Ivanenko 2016).

### 2.2.5 Statistical analyses

Menhinik’s Index was used for determining the xylomycobiota species richness. Shannon’s Index of diversity was used for the generalised assessment of wood-destroying fungi diversity. Pielou’s Index was used for the generalized assessment of equitability of xylomycobiota (Schmidt 1980). The similarity of formed community “tree-xylomycobiota was studied using cluster analysis (Origin. 2015. Origin 8.6. OriginLab Corp., Northampton, MA) by the weighted average indicators of investigated species and fungi at each experimental plots. The standardized Euclidean distance was selected for the assessment of distance.

## 3. Results

Our assessment in the studied area showed that forests ranked by the effects of human impact and, accordingly, stages of recreational digression of territory: 1 – “Holosiiivskiy lis”, 2 – “Bila dibrova”, 3 – “Lysa Hora,,” 4 – “Terevky”.

The mycological study detected altogether 51 species of macromycetes (224 findings of xylo-trophic fungi), 34 genera, 20 families, 7 orders of division Basidiomycota (class Agaricomycetes) at all experimental plots (Appendix 1). In general, 451 individuals (11 species) of woody plants were studied.

### 3.1. Assessment results at the tract “Holosiiivskiy lis”

The tract EP1 (0.7 ha) is an array of natural hornbeam oakery on gray forest loams. The first storey composed of *Quercus robur* L. and *Carpinus betulus* L. The second storey composed of *Tilia cordata* Mill., *Acer platanoides* L., *Ulmus glabra* Huds. The stand parameters of trees were followed (Table 3). The understorey was composed biogroups of *Corylus avellana* L., *Euonymus europaeus* L., *Euonymus verrucosa* Scop., and *Crataegus oxyacantha* L. The herbaceous vegetation was composed primarily of miscellaneous herbs. Projected cover of herbaceous storey was 93.5%. *Asperula odorata* L., *Brachypodium sylvaticum* L., *Carex sylvatica* L., *Lamium galeobdolon* Subsp., *Poa nemoralis* L., *Polygonatum odoratum* (Mill.) Druce, *Sanicula europaea* L., *Stellaria holostea* L. were dominated. Mechanically damaged trees were not registered. The total indicator of the state soil surface was I stage of digression. The overall stage of recreational transformation was I. At EP1 we detected 25 species (68, findings) of wood-destroying fungi presented 22 genera, 13 families, 7 orders on 5 species of trees. 70.6% findings of fungi were eurytrophes of II rank on deciduous trees and 22.1% – eurytrophes of I rank. Stenotrophes (7.3%, findings) was represented by only one species: *Fistulina hepatica* (Schaeff.) With. (Appendix 1). At EP1

the maximum number of wood-destroying fungi (44.1%, findings) were occurred in the ground myco-horizon, and 26.5% in the stem myco-horizon, 16.2% in the photosynthesising myco-horizon, 13.2% in the stumps myco-horizon (Appendix 2). 9 species of xylotrophic fungi were detected on *Quercus robur* L. Among them there were three parasite species, and their share in the phytocoenosis comprised only 10.0%: *Fistulina hepatica* (Schaeff.) With. (on tree of I Kraft class, II–III state categories; one deadwood; stumps,  $D_{ave} = 105.0$  cm), *Inocutis dryophila* (Berk.) Fiasson et Niemelä (on tree of III Kraft class, IV state category) and *Phellinus robustus* (P. Karst.) Bourdot et Galzin (on trees of I Kraft class, III–IV state categories; one deadwood).

The analysis of the vitality of *Quercus robur* L. showed that 64.7% findings of wood-destroying fungi occurred mainly on trees of I Kraft class (64.0%, trees). The lowest number of fungi (5.9%, findings) occurred on trees of III Kraft class (12.0%, trees). The shares of trees of II and III Kraft classes were the same. WAKC of wilting trees (1.8) showed that the share of trees of I and II classes Kraft in this category gradually increased (Table 4). The analysis of the health conditions of *Quercus robur* L. revealed that the stands were heavily weakened ( $I = 1.68$ ).

The proportion of healthy trees was below 24.0%. Others were weakened trees to varying degrees, including 5.5% recently dead stands. The greatest number of xylotrophs (29.4%, findings) occurred on 8.0% trees of IV state category. An equal distribution of xylotrophs (23.5%, findings) was detected on weakened (38.0%, trees) and heavily weakened trees (24.5%, trees). We also observed *Laetiporus sulphureus* (Bull.) Murrill on

fallen wood (stems,  $D_{ave} = 67.5$  cm) of *Quercus robur* L. 16 species of fungi were detected on *Carpinus betulus* L. The analysis of the vitality of *Carpinus betulus* L. showed that approximately one half of the wood-destroying fungi (47.1%, findings) occurred on trees of II Kraft class (26.2%, trees). An equal distribution of xylotrophs (17.6%, findings) was detected on IV and V Kraft classes (26.2% and 7.1%, trees). Only one species, *Vuilleminia comedens* (Nees) Maire (5.9%, findings), occurred on trees of III Kraft class (12.0%, trees). WAKC of heavily weakened individuals of *Carpinus betulus* L. (3.2–3.4) showed that drying of trees was natural process compared to the distribution of WAKC of *Quercus robur* L. The analysis of the health conditions of *Carpinus betulus* L. showed that the stands were healthy ( $I = 1.45$ ) unlike *Quercus robur* L. The proportion of healthy trees was 38.1% and of the wilting ones was less 3.1%. An equal distribution of xylotrophs (29.4%, findings) was detected on weakened (16.7%, trees) and recently dead trees (16.7%, trees). On healthy trees of *Carpinus betulus* L. we registered carpophores of *Fomes fomentarius* (L.) Fr. (11.8%, findings). On fallen wood of *Carpinus betulus* L. (stems, logs,  $D_{ave} = 16.5–46.5$  cm) we observed 12 species of wood-destroying fungi. *Bjerkandera adusta* (Willd.) P.Karst., *Pluteus cervinus* (Schaeff.) P.Kumm., *Schizophora paradoxa* (Schrad.) Donk, *Stereum subtomentosum* Pouzar, *Trichaptum bifforme* (Fr.) Ryvar den preferred the broken area. *Auricularia auricula-judae* (Bull.) Quél., *Cerrena unicolor* (Bull.) Murrill, *Daedaleopsis tricolor* (Bull.) Bondartsev et Singer, *Fomes fomentarius* (L.) Fr., *Stereum hirsutum* (Willd.) Pers. and *Trametes gibbosa* (Pers.) Fr. developing on integral bark.

**Table 3.** Characteristic of dominant woody vegetation.

| No. EP | Species               | A, y.  | N, pcs. | $D_{ave}$ , cm | $D_{min} - D_{max}$ ; S.D. | $H_{ave}$ , m | $H_{min} - H_{max}$ ; S.D. | P       | $G_n$<br>$m^2 ha^{-1}$ |
|--------|-----------------------|--------|---------|----------------|----------------------------|---------------|----------------------------|---------|------------------------|
| 1      | <i>Q. robur</i>       | 80–100 | 162     | 88.4           | 72.1–122.1; 9.77           | 17.8          | 14.9–19.1; 1.95            | 0.6–0.7 | 194.2                  |
|        | <i>C. betulus</i>     | 60–80  | 194     | 29.7           | 24.5–39.7; 5.73            | 16.8          | 15.1–19.0; 1.93            |         | 99.3                   |
|        | <i>T. cordata</i>     | 60–80  | 69      | 33.2           | 22.5–37.4; 7.48            | 15.0          | 13.1–16.9; 1.68            |         | 52.3                   |
|        | <i>A. platanoides</i> | 40–60  | 104     | 29.8           | 21.9–39.5; 6.13            | 14.1          | 13.0–15.84; 1.78           |         | 663.1                  |
| 2      | <i>U. glabra</i>      | 60–80  | 75      | 32.5           | 24.7–45.3; 7.92            | 16.7          | 14.5–18.14; 2.02           | 0.7–0.8 | 43.0                   |
|        | <i>Q. robur</i>       | 60–80  | 137     | 53.8           | 46.1–80.5; 9.98            | 19.3          | 17.2–21.5; 1.65            |         | 119.8                  |
|        | <i>P. sylvestris</i>  | 60–80  | 148     | 36.8           | 26.5–40.1; 7.04            | 18.1          | 15.4–19.9; 1.86            |         | 101.5                  |
| 3      | <i>A. platanoides</i> | 20–40  | 58      | 16.3           | 12.5–19.1; 7.25            | 12.1          | 10.7–13.6; 1.14            | 0.8–0.9 | 29.7                   |
|        | <i>Q. robur</i>       | 60–80  | 97      | 56.7           | 44.1–69.5; 5.03            | 18.2          | 14.5–19.9; 2.14            |         | 98.4                   |
|        | <i>C. betulus</i>     | 60–80  | 56      | 22.5           | 19.8–31.3; 4.98            | 17.0          | 14.5–18.4; 1.25            |         | 48.1                   |
|        | <i>A. platanoides</i> | 40–60  | 87      | 24.1           | 17.5–29.7; 6.48            | 14.9          | 12.8017.5; 2.35            |         | 64.1                   |
|        | <i>T. cordata</i>     | 60–80  | 39      | 30.1           | 25.3–38.5; 8.26            | 14.8          | 12.8–18.0; 1.84            |         | 28.1                   |
| 4      | <i>F. excelsior</i>   | 40–60  | 30      | 22.1           | 17.5–28.3; 5.74            | 15.1          | 13.9–16.8; 1.45            | 0.6–0.7 | 32.3                   |
|        | <i>Q. robur</i>       | 60–80  | 155     | 76.2           | 60.4–94.2; 8.12            | 19.1          | 16.4–24.3; 2.17            |         | 135.6                  |
|        | <i>A. platanoides</i> | 40–60  | 125     | 31.2           | 23.8–41.4; 8.55            | 15.3          | 13.7–18.0; 1.95            |         | 78.5                   |
|        | <i>P. avium</i>       | 40–60  | 44      | 34.8           | 25.1–40.1; 5.14            | 15.1          | 12.9–18.2; 2.27            |         | 25.3                   |

**Table 4.** The health conditions of *Quercus robur* L. and the share of findings of wood destroying fungi.

| EP | The health conditions* |          |             |      |          |             |      |          |             |      |          |             |      |          |             |
|----|------------------------|----------|-------------|------|----------|-------------|------|----------|-------------|------|----------|-------------|------|----------|-------------|
|    | I                      |          |             | II   |          |             | III  |          |             | IV   |          |             | V    |          |             |
|    | WAKC                   | %, trees | %, findings | WAKC | %, trees | %, findings | WAKC | %, trees | %, findings | WAKC | %, trees | %, findings | WAKC | %, trees | %, findings |
| 1  | 1.5                    | 24.0     | 6.0         | 2.1  | 38.0     | 23.5        | 3.0  | 24.5     | 23.5        | 1.8  | 8.0      | 29.4        | 4.0  | 5.5      | 17.6        |
| 2  | 2.0                    | 21.4     | 23.9        | 2.5  | 39.3     | 42.8        | 2.3  | 10.7     | 11.1        | 3.0  | 21.4     | 11.1        | 4.5  | 7.2      | 11.1        |
| 3  | 1.3                    | 13.9     | 14.3        | 1.3  | 36.1     | 14.3        | 2.2  | 38.8     | 42.8        | 3.3  | 5.6      | 28.6        | 4.0  | 5.6      | 0           |
| 4  | 1.4                    | 37.9     | 11.2        | 1.4  | 25.8     | 18.5        | 2.7  | 16.7     | 18.5        | 2.4  | 16.7     | 33.3        | 2.7  | 2.9      | 18.5        |



*Xylaria polymorpha* (Pers.) Grev. developing in clusters on rotten wood of *Carpinus betulus* L.

Wood-destroying fungi recorded on *Tilia cordata* Mill. (*Fomes fomentarius* (L.) Fr., on stem of living tree of I Kraft class, V state category), *Acer platanoides* L. (*Dendrothele acerina* (Pers.) P.A. Lemke, on stem base of living tree of I–II Kraft classes, I–II state categories) and *Ulmus glabra* Huds. (*Dendrothele alliacea* (Quél.) P.A. Lemke, on stem base of living tree of I–II Kraft classes, I, III state categories) occurring only a few. On fallen wood (stems,  $D_{ave} = 19.5$  cm) we registered *Schizopora flavipora* (Berk. et M.A. Curtis ex Cooke) Ryvarden and *Stereum subtomentosum* Pouzar. The plantings of *Tilia cordata* Mill., *Acer platanoides* L. and *Ulmus glabra* Huds. were healthy ( $I = 1.25$ ;  $I = 1.34$ ;  $I = 1.21$ ).

### 3.2 Assessment results at the tract “Bila dibrova”

The tract EP2 has a low sandy hill, which are the remnants of upland terraces Dnipro and Desna. The first storey consisted of *Quercus robur* L. and *Pinus sylvestris* L.. The second storey composed of *Acer platanoides* L. (Table 3). The understorey was composed biogroups of *Corylus avellana* L., *Frangula alnus* Mill., *Sambucus nigra* L., *Sorbus aucuparia* L., *Cerasus avium* L., and *Rubus fruticosus* L. The total projected cover of herbaceous storey was 80.0%. *Convallaria majalis* L., *Driopteris filix-mas* L., *Geranium sanguineum* L., *Stellaria nemorum* L., *Polygonatum multiflorum* (L.) All. were dominated. The mechanical damage of trees was not observed. The soil surface was in II stage of degradation. The overall stage of recreational transformation was II. In total, we detected we detected 29 species (72, findings) of wood destroying fungi from 23 genera, 15 families, and 6 orders on 6 species of trees. 61.1% findings of fungi were eurytrophes of II rank on deciduous trees and 36.1% – eurytrophes of I

rank. Eurytrophes of II rank on coniferous trees (2.8%, findings) was represented by only one species *Heterobasidion annosum* (Fr.) Bref. (Appendix 1). At EP2 the 59.7% findings of wood destroying fungi were occurred in the ground myco-horizon (Appendix 2). On *Quercus robur* L. we detected 5 species of xylotrophic fungi. The analysis of health conditions of *Quercus robur* L. showed that the stands were weakened ( $I = 2.45$ ). The proportion of healthy and the wilting trees was the same (21.4%). The share of recently dead stands were minimal at EP2 (7.2%). WAKC of healthy trees was 2.0 (Table 4). The maximum number of xylotrophs was recorded on *Quercus robur* L. trees of II state category (42.8%). The same number of xylotrophs (11.1%) was recorded on the trees of III and IV state categories. The analysis of vitality revealed that one third of findings (33.3%) were detected on trees in I Kraft development class (with 48.1% frequency at the plot). The smallest number of observations (3.8%) was recorded on trees in III Kraft development class. The proportion of xylotrophic fungi that developed in II, IV, V Kraft development classes ranged from 16.7% to 22.2%. Besides, the dead substrate of the three categories was also detected at the EP2 (Fig. 1). It should be noted that the biggest number of species and findings of xylotrophic fungi on dead substrate coincides with the falling wood of *Quercus robur* L. No wood destroying fungi were detected on trees of *Acer platanoides* L. ( $I = 1.35$ ) and *Pinus sylvestris* L. ( $I = 2.42$ ). Only developing of *Trametes ochracea* (Pers.) Gilb. et Ryvarden and *Trametes versicolor* (L.) Lloyd was detected on branches of *Acer platanoides* L. On stumps ( $D_{ave} = 50.6$  cm) of *Pinus sylvestris* L. was detected 5 species of xylotrophic fungi. Wood-destroying fungi on understorey were found on the bark and saw cut of *Cerasus avium* L. (10 species; branches,  $D_{ave} = 7.8$  cm; stems,  $D_{ave} = 17.9$  cm) and on the bark of *Sambucus nigra* L. (2 species; branches,  $D_{ave} = 3.2$  cm).

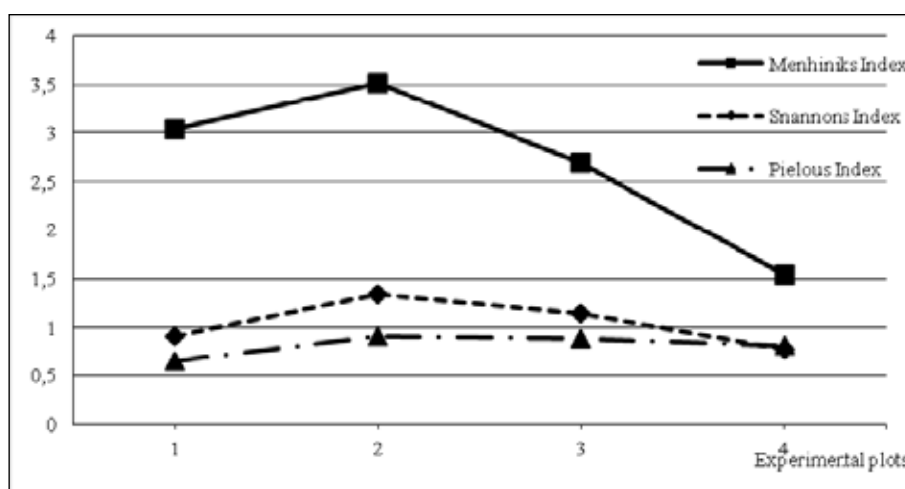


Fig. 1. Species richness of xylomyco-biota.

### 3.3. Assessment results at the tract Tract “Lysa Hora“

The tract EP3 is represented by hornbeam-oak forest, which was formed in place of cleared space of oak. The first storey consisted of *Quercus robur* L. and *Carpinus betulus* L. The second storey composed of *Acer platanoides* L., *Tilia cordata* Mill., and *Fraxinus excelsior* L. (Table 3). The undergrowth was poorly developed, sometimes represented by biogroups of *Sambucus nigra* L. and *Euonymus verrucosa* Scop. The herbaceous storey was represented by ruderal species. The projected cover of herbaceous storey was less than 35.0%. The total indicator of the state soil surface was III stage of digression. The total area of mechanical damage of trees was 0.32 m<sup>2</sup>. The overall stage of recreational transformation was III. At EP3 we detected 19 species (50, findings) of wood destroying fungi from 13 genera, 10 families, and 5 orders on six species of trees. 74.0% findings of fungi were eurytrophes of II rank on deciduous trees and 16.0% – eurytrophes of I rank. Stenotrophes (10.0%, findings) was represented by *Fistulina hepatica* (Schaeff.) With. and *Peniophora rufomarginata* (Pers.) Bourdot et Galzin (Appendix 1). At EP3 the maximum number of wood destroying fungi (34.0%, findings) were occurred in the ground myco-horizon (Appendix 2). On *Quercus robur* L. we detected 5 species of xylo-trophic fungi. The analysis of health conditions of *Quercus robur* L. showed that the stands were weakened (I = 2.41) too. The proportion of healthy trees was 13.4% (Table 4). The share of weakened (36.1%) and heavily weakened (38.8%) were almost equal. WAKC of wilting and recently dead trees of *Quercus robur* L. were 3.3 and 3.4 accordingly. 42.8% of findings of xylo-trophic fungi was recorded on trees of II state category. The same number of xylo-trophs (11.1%) was detected on the trees of I and II state categories (14.3%). The analysis of the vitality was quite predictable: 57.1% findings occurred mainly on 58.3% trees of I Kraft class. The analysis of the vitality of *Quercus robur* L. showed that the 64.7% findings of fungi occurred mainly on trees of I Kraft class (64.0%, trees). The lowest number of fungi (5.9%, findings) occurred on trees of III Kraft class (12.0%, trees). WAKC of wilting trees (1.8) showed that the share of trees in I, II Kraft classes gradually increased (Table 4).

On *Carpinus betulus* L. we detected 7 species of xylo-trophic fungi. The same findings of xylo-trophic fungi (30.0%) was detected on healthy trees (60.0%) and recently dead trees (4.0%). Value of WAKC of healthy individuals were not exceed 1.2 – 1.4. The developing of 5 species of xylo-trophic fungi was detected on falling wood (branches,  $D_{ave} = 2.7$  cm) of *Carpinus betulus* L. On stems ( $D_{ave} = 20.5$  cm) of *Pinus sylvestris* L. was detected *Stereum hirsutum* (Willd.) Pers. One species of xylo-trophic fungi were detected on individuals of second storey: *Acer platanoides* L. (*Dendrothele acerina* (Pers.) P.A. Lemke; 11 findings; I, III, V Kraft classes; I-III state categories), *Tilia cordata* L. (*Peniophora rufomarginata*

(Pers.) Bourdot et Galzin; 1 finding; III Kraft class; II state category). The analysis of health conditions of *Acer platanoides* L. showed that the stands were healthy I = 1.37). The share of healthy trees was more than half (57.7%), wilting individuals were only 3.9%. *Tilia cordata* L. (I = 2.75) and *Fraxinus excelsior* L. (I = 1.65) had worse health condition compared to *Acer platanoides* L. Only *Peniophora cinerea* (Pers.) Cooke was recorded on dead-wood of *Acer platanoides* L.

### 3.4. Assessment results at the tract “Teremky“

The tract EP4 was located in the Tract “Teremky,, on the outskirts of the city. The first storey consisted of one *Quercus robur* L. and the second storey composed of *Acer platanoides* L. and *Prunus avium* (L.) (Table 3). The projected cover of herbaceous storey was less than 35.0%. Ruderal and pratal species were dominated at EP4. The indicator species (only *Asarum europaeum* L., 0.5%) were recorded around butt of *Quercus robur* L. Mechanically damaged were registered only on stems of *Quercus robur* L. The total indicator of the state soil surface was IV stage of digression. The clogging of the soil’s surface was about 7.5%. The overall stage of recreational transformation was IV.

At EP4 we detected 9 species (34, findings) of wood destroying fungi represented nine genera, seven families, four orders. 88.3% findings of fungi were eurytrophes of II rank on deciduous trees and 8.8% – eurytrophes of I rank. Stenotrophes (2.9%, findings) were represented by only one species: *Stereum gausapatum* (Fr.) (Appendix 1). The greatest number of the identified xylo-trophic fungi (41.1%, findings) was founded in the photosynthesising myco-horizon and 35.3% – in the stem myco-horizon, while in the ground and the butt myco-horizons we detected the same number of wood destroying fungi (11.8%, findings) (Appendix 2). On *Quercus robur* L. we detected 6 species of xylo-trophic fungi. We recorded only one biotrophic species – *Phellinus robustus* (P. Karst.) Bourdot et Galzin. Their frequency et EP4 was 11.0% (II, IV–V state category). The investigated stands of *Quercus robur* L. were weakened (I = 2.11). The proportion of healthy trees was 37.9% despite the high stage of recreational transformation. The maximum number of xylo-trophs (33.3%, findings) was recorded on *Quercus robur* L. trees of IV state category, while their share in EP was only 16.7%. Share of fungi was equal on trees of II–III, V state categories – 18.5%. The analysis of the vitality of *Quercus robur* L. revealed that wood destroying fungi occurred mainly on *Quercus robur* L. trees of I Kraft class (48.0%, findings; 63.6%, trees); and the proportion of xylo-trophic fungi in II and III Kraft classes was the same (26.0%, findings; 16.7%, trees). WAKC of wilting and recently dead stands were 2.4 and 2.6.

On living trees of *Acer platanoides* L. (I = 1.55) we detected only one species – *Dendrothele acerina* (Pers.) P. A. Lemke (80.0%, findings; 46.2%, trees of II state

category). Analysis of the relationship between the findings of *Dendrothele acerina* (Pers.) P. A. Lemke on *Acer platanoides* L. and vitality of stands showed that 60.0% of the findings dedicated to the trees in I Kraft class (11.5%). Xylomycobiota was absent on individuals of *Acer platanoides* L. in III Kraft class (26.9%, trees). No wood destroying fungi were developed on trees in in IV Kraft class (7.8%, trees), V Kraft class (34.6%, trees) and *Prunus avium* (L.). The developing of 2 species (2, findings) of *Peniophora quercina* (Pers.) Cooke and *Vuilleminia comedens* (Nees) Maire) was detected on falling wood.

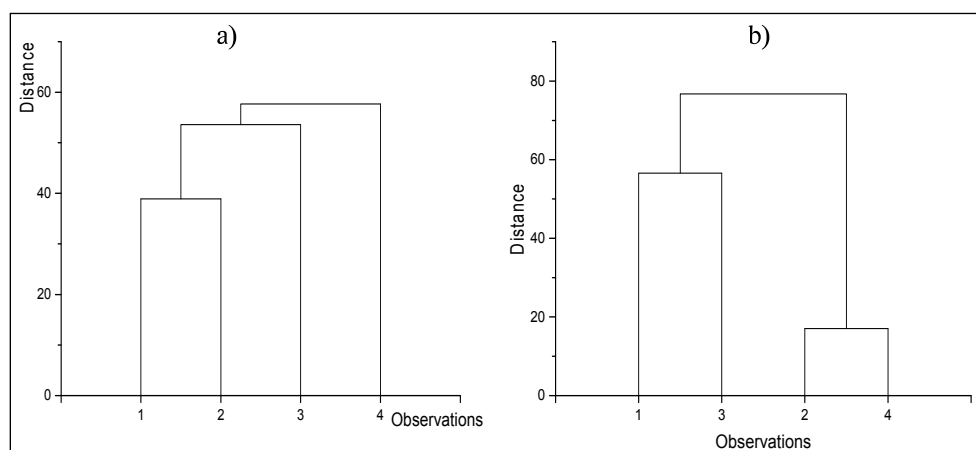
### 3.5. Species richness of wood destroying fungi

Analysis of species richness of wood destroying fungi of investigated forests in urban conditions on gradient of recreational transformation showed that the EP1 had species richest diversity. In general, species variety of xylo-trophic macromycetes at experimental plots caused by existence of species with wide substrate preferendum. It is also associated with the development of stenotrophic fungi. Value of Menhinik's Index is increasing on gradient of recreational transformation. Interrelation between the degree of recreational transformation and value of Shannon's Index is not established. Assessment of equitability of xylomycobiota showed that value of Pielou's Index is decreasing on gradient of recreational transformation (Fig. 1). Distribution of xylomycobiota by categories of substrates showed that 31.3% of the findings were registered in *Quercus robur* L. (I–IV categories of state), 68.7% – in the dead substrates. Findings of xylomycobionts on *Carpinus betulus* L. were dominated in the dead substrates too (86.7%), the maximum number of findings of xylo-trophic fungi on trees was at EP1. Findings of xylomycobionts on *Acer platanoides* L. were dominated in living trees (62.5%). Wood destroying fungi on *Pinus sylvestris* L. were registered only on old dead substrates. Distribution of xylomycobiota by

myco-horizons showed that the maximum number of findings were concentrated in the ground myco-horizon (38.4%), while the minimum – in the stem base myco-horizon (11.8%). The findings of xylo-trophic fungi on root myco-horizon were unrecorded. Analysis of trophic composition of xylomycobiota at all EP showed that the greatest number of eurytrophes of II rank on deciduous species (88.3%) detected at EP4; eurytrophes of I rank (36.1%) – at EP2; eurytrophes of II rank on coniferous species (2.8%) – only at EP2. The average share of stenotrophes at the ecoprofile was 5.05%.

### 3.6. Peculiarities of studied consortium

It is clear accordingly, recreational transformation of EP that consortium relations of *Quercus robur* L. at EP1 and EP2 are more similar to each other (Fig. 2 a). In addition, consortium relations of EP3 and EP4 are more similar to each other. Analyses of formed consortium relations of *Acer platanoides* L. showed that consortium relations of EP2 and EP4 are more similar to each other too (Fig. 2 b). Such distribution confirmed our data on the absence of a direct relationship between the degree of recreational transformation of the territory and state of community of *Acer*-xylomycokomplex (Blinkova & Ivanenko 2016). Obtained results regarding the similarities of clusters, comparison of compositions of trees and fungi in the formed communities in the forests depending on the recreational transformation of environment in urban conditions require further researches. Analyse of dead substrate of the host tree of xylo-trophic fungi showed that the biggest number of species were developed on dead-wood ( $D_{ave} = 10.0 - 50.0$  cm; 17 species) at EP2 (Fig. 3). Maximum number of species on stumps were recorded at EP2 too. Maximum number of species on branches and stems ( $D_{ave} = 5.0 - 10.0$  cm) were recorded at EP1. It should be noted that the biggest number of findings of xylo-trophic fungi on dead substrate coincides with the deadwood at EP1 (15 findings) and EP2 (13 findings)



**Fig. 2.** Clustering dendrogram of ecological links of *Quercus robur* L. (a) and *Acer platanoides* L. (b) in natural and seminatural forests (EP1–EP4).

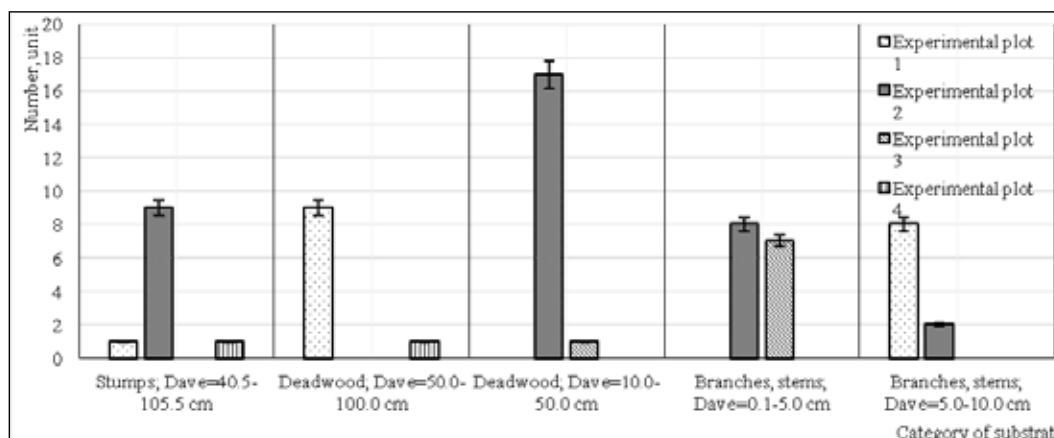


Fig. 3. Number of observed species of xylotrophic fungi on experimental plots in individual substrate categories.

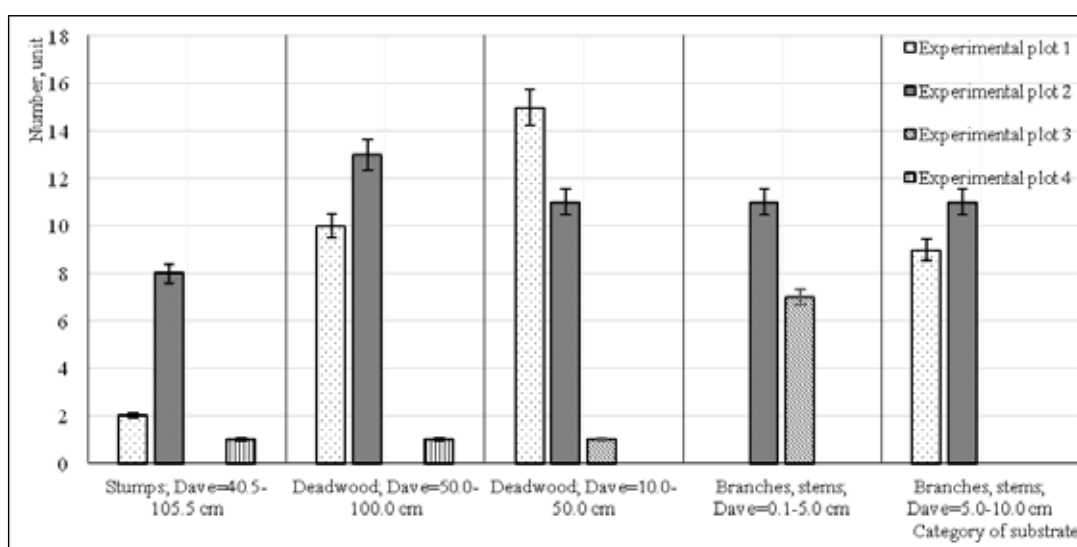


Fig. 4. Number of observed findings of xylotrophic fungi on experimental plots in individual substrate categories.

(Fig. 4). Minimum number of findings at the ecoprofile were assigned to stumps (only 1 – 8 findings). The close relationships between the distributions of fungi in various categories of dead substrate depending on recreational transformation of territory were not found.

#### 4. Discussion

The diversity patterns of fungi along the geographical gradient appear to be influenced by management related factors (forest history, dead wood availability and continuity, habitat fragmentation). An increase in the abundance of dead wood in forests will benefit diversity (Odor et al. 2006). Previous publications shown that the some species are highly specialized in their resource use and suffer from loss of connectivity at three spatial scales (along the large-scale gradient, at the landscape scale and at the scale of a forest stand) (Norden et al. 2013). Conservation of fungi requires that substantial amounts of dead wood is left for natural decay in a variety of natu-

ral forest environments representing different tree species, so that heterogeneity in dead wood types is secured (Heilmann-Clausen et al. 2005).

Our distribution by myco-horizons on macro level evidences that xylomycobiota develops more in the ground myco-horizon. Depending on species composition of forests also the composition of xylophages is changing. It has been proved that the composition of xylophages in studied recreational transformed forests are not balanced, as dispersal of xylophages in them is limited by lesser quantity of available live and dead rooting substrate, by greater openness of canopy of the stand, by less protected properties of the herbaceous cover, digestion of the soil surface layer.

The importance of different fractions of deadwood for species diversity of wood-inhabiting fungi was investigated in many studies. Category of substrate (living trees or deadwood) is essential for developing of xylophages. The number of species varied in different deadwood and decay substrate. The different stages of decay and the different substrate of deadwood had significantly

different species richness of xylotrophic fungi (Sefidi & Etemad 2015). The results of other studies indicated the morphometric parameters and category of dead wood describe the greatest variance of numbers of species. The differences in deadwood profiles among the habitat types can be considered the main source of variation. The high qualitative diversity of deadwood substrates in natural forests creates multiple ecological niches for individual fungal species to occupy. The natural forest structure and dynamics provide, in turn, variable microclimatic conditions to meet the demands of wood destroying fungi (Norden et al. 2004; Sefidi&Etemad 2015). Species number per tree increased significantly with increasing tree diameter, pointing out large trees to be most valuable for fungal diversity if single samples are compared. These are interpreted to reflect a combination of two factors: firstly, small diameter represent a larger surface area per volume and hence more space for fungal carpophors, than large diameter (Heilmann-Clausen & Christensen 2004). Fungal species richness in small-diameter deadwood was highest in recreational transformed forests (Juutilainen et al. 2016). Our results indicate that type of substrate (living trees or dead substrate) and morphometric parameters of deadwood substrate are very important factors affecting fungal community compositions. Moreover, this study showed that the biggest number of species and findings were recorded on deadwood compared to living trees. The highest value for richness and evenness indices calculated in large diameter dead wood.

Many scientists were focused on diversity and host preference of wood decaying fungi in urban areas. Compared of frequency and diversity of wood decaying fungi in natural forest of the town of Zvolen showed that the highest diversity and the highest incidence of wood decaying fungi were detected in area with minimum of the human impact on the forest (Sliacka 2013). Our results showed that state of communities of tree vegetation and xylotrophic fungi of natural and semi-natural forests in urban conditions depends on the degree of recreational transformation of the territory. The species richness of xylomycobiota at forests increases by the recreational transformation, which are evidences by the values of Menhinik's Index. Our data on changes in the condition of woody plants due to recreational transformation are correlated with the results of studies by other authors. The case study of Kyiv city has established that as increases the recreational transformation of natural and semi-natural forests, the interrelation of trophic, ecological and systematic compositions of xylotrophic fungi and vital, age compositions and health condition of woody vegetation is lost similar for our data to parks (Blinkova & Ivanenko 2016). The biggest number of findings of xylotrophs is detected on living trees of *Quercus robur* L. In general, health condition of dominating woody species in urban conditions is decreasing from the healthy to the heavily weakened. Our results show that under the categories of substrates of broad-leaved tree species, it has been estab-

lished that 62.9% of findings of wood-destroying fungi is detected on living trees of I–IV state categories. Xylo-trophs on coniferous species have been detected only on stumps of *Pinus sylvestris* L. Hence, inter-links between tree vegetation and xylotrophic fungi are significantly influenced by human activities.

## Acknowledgement

This study was supported by the grant no. 0117U002647 “Syn-ecological diagnostics of anthropogenic transformations of forest ecosystems,, of the National University of Life and Environmental Sciences of Ukraine and the grant no. 0117U004320 “Adaptation strategies of species of plants, fungi and animals at different levels of anthropogenic transformation of the environment,, of the Institute for evolutionary ecology of the National Academy of Sciences of Ukraine.

## References

- Arefev, S., 2010: Sistemnyy analiz bioty ksyloτροφnukh hrybiv. Novosibirsk, Nauka, 260 p.
- Bilyk, G., 1977: Geobotanichne zonuвання Ukrayiny. Kyiv, Naukova dumka, 301 p.
- Blinkova, O., Ivanenko, O., 2014: Co-adaptive tree vegetation system of wood-destroying (xylotrophic) fungi in artificial phytocoenoses, Ukraine. Lesnícky časopis – Forestry Journal, 60:168–176.
- Blinkova, O., Ivanenko, O., 2016: Communities of tree vegetation and wood-destroying fungi in parks of the Kyiv city, Ukraine. Lesnícky časopis – Forestry Journal, 62:110–122.
- Cherepanov, S., 1995: Sosydisti roslyny Rossii ta sysid-nukh terytoriy. Sankt-Peterburg, Mir i sim'ya, 992 p.
- Cléménçon, H., 2009: Methods for working with mac-rofungi: Laboratory, cultivation and preparation of larger fungi for light microscopy. Eaching, IHW Verlag, 88 p.
- Dilis, N., 1974: Programma i metodolohiya heobo-tanicheskikh isslegovaniy. Moskva, Nauka, 404 p.
- Eytungen, G., 1949: Forest science. Moscow, Selchozgiz, 246 p.
- Gavrilyuk, V., 1956: Pryroda Kyiva i prylehukh terytoriy: fizyko-heohrafichna kharakterystyka. Kyiv, Univer-sitet shevchenko, 70 p.
- Juutilainen, K., Monkkonen, M., Kotiranta, H., Halme, P., 2016: The role of novel forest ecosystems in the conservation of wood-inhabiting fungi in boreal broadleaved forests. Ecology and Evolution, 6: 6943–6954.
- Heilmann-Clausen, J., Christensen, M., 2004: Does size matter? On the importance of various dead wood fractions for fungal diversity in Danish beech forests. Forest Ecology and Management,, 201:105–117.
- Heilmann-Clausen, J., Aude, E., Christensen, M. 2005: Cryptogam communities on decaying deciduous wood – does tree species diversity matter? Biodiversity Conservation, 14: 2061–2078.

- Kirk, P., Ansell, A., 1992: Authors of fungal names. A list of authors of scientific names of fungi, with recommended standard forms of their names, including abbreviation. Kew, Int. Myc. Inst., 95 p.
- Koukol, O., Kotlaba, F., Pouzar, Z., 2014: Taxonomic evaluation of the polypore *Daedaleopsis tricolor* based on morphology and molecular data. *Czech Mycology*, 66:107–119.
- Mirkin, B., Naumova, L., 1998: *Heobotanika*. Ufa: Hilem, 413 p.
- Norden, B., Ryberg, M., Götmark, F., Olausson, B., 2004: Relative importance of coarse and fine woody debris for the diversity of wood-inhabiting fungi in temperate broadleaf forests. *Biological Conservation*, 117:1–10.
- Norden, J., Penttil, R., Siitonen, J., Tomppo, E., Ovaskainen, O., 2013: Specialist species of wood-inhabiting fungi struggle while generalists thrive in fragmented boreal forests. *Journal of Ecology*, 101:701–712.
- Odor, P., Heilmann-Clausen, J., Christensen, M., Aude, E., van Dort, K., Piltaver, A. et al., 2006: Diversity of dead wood inhabiting fungi and bryophytes in seminatural beech forests in Europe. *Biological Conservation*, 131:58–71.
- Polyakov, A., 2009: Krymski lisovi formatsiy i yikh ekolohichna rol'. Kharkiv, Nove slovo, 405 p.
- Robert, V., Stegehuis, G., Stalpers, J., 2005: The MycoBank engine and related databases.
- Rysin, L., 2003: *Monitorinh rekreatsiynyts lisiv*. Moskva, RAN, 167 p.
- Sanitary Forest Regulation in Ukraine, 2016: Resolution of Government of Ukraine No. 724 (12 May 2016). Kyiv, 20 p.
- Schmidt, V., 1980: *Statistical methods in comparative floristic*. Leningrad, Publisher Leningrad University, 176 p.
- Schmidt, O., 2006: *Wood and Tree Fungi. Biology, Damage, Protection, and Use*. Heidelberg, Springer, 336 p.
- Sefidi, K., Etemad, V., 2015: Dead wood characteristics influencing macrofungi species abundance and diversity in Caspian natural beech (*Fagus orientalis* Lipsky) forests. *Forest Systems*, 24:1–9.
- Shigo, A., 1984: Compartmentalization: a conceptual framework for understanding how trees grow and defend themselves. *Annual Review of Phytopathology*, 22:189–214.
- Sliacka, I., 2013: Diversity and host preference of wood decaying fungi in the town parks of Zvolen. *Acta Facultatis Ecologiae*, 28:71–78.
- Vasilevich, V., 1992: *Biolohicheskoe raznoobrazie: podkhody k izucheniyu i sokhranenyu*. Sankt-Peterburg, Bin Ran, 232 p.



**Appendix 1.** Taxonomic and trophic compositions of wood destroying fungi at all experimental plots.

| Order   | Family   | Species   | Trophic groups*                               | No. EP                              |    |
|---|--|---|---|-------------------------------------|----|
| Agaricales                                    | Fistulinaceae  | <i>Fistulina hepatica</i> (Schaeff.) With.                            | S   | 1, 3                                |    |
|   | Physalacriaceae  | <i>Cylindrobasidium evolvens</i> (Fr.) Jülich                         | E2d   | 3                                   |    |
|   | Pluteaceae   | <i>Pluteus cervinus</i> (Schaeff.) P.Kumm.                            | E1  | 1, 2                                |    |
|   | Pterulaceae  | <i>Radulomyces molaris</i> (Chaillet ex Fr.) Christ.                  | E2d   | 3                                   |    |
|   | Schizophyllaceae   | <i>Schizophyllum commune</i> Fr.                                      | E1  | 1                                   |    |
| Auriculariales                                | Auriculariaceae  | <i>Auricularia auricula-judae</i> (Bull.) Quél.                       | E1  | 1, 2                                |    |
| Corticiales                                   | Corticaceae  | <i>Corticium roseum</i> Pers.   | E1  | 3                                   |    |
|   |  | <i>Dendrothele acerina</i> (Pers.) P. A. Lemke                        | E2d   | 1, 3, 4                             |    |
|   |  | <i>D. alliacea</i> (Quél.) P. A. Lemke                                | E2d   | 1                                   |    |
|   |  | <i>Vuilleminia comedens</i> (Nees) Maire                              | E2d   | 1, 2, 3, 4                          |    |
|   |  | <i>Hymenochaete rubiginosa</i> (Dicks.) Lév.                          | E2d   | 2                                   |    |
| Hymenochaetales                               | Hymenochaetaceae   | <i>Inocutis dryophila</i> (Berk.) Fiasson et Niemelä                  | E2d   | 1                                   |    |
|   |  | <i>Inonotus hispidus</i> (Bull.) P. Karst.                            | E2d   | 3                                   |    |
|   |  | <i>I. radiatus</i> (Sowerby) P. Karst.                                | E2d   | 1                                   |    |
|   |  | <i>Phellinus ferruginosus</i> (Schad.) Pat.                           | E1  | 2, 3                                |    |
|   |  | <i>P. robustus</i> (P. Karst.) Bourdot et Galzin                      | E2d   | 1, 2, 3, 4                          |    |
|   |  | <i>P. tuberculatus</i> (Baumg.) Niemelä                               | E2d   | 2                                   |    |
|   |  | <i>Schizopora flavipora</i> (Berk. et M.A. Curtis ex Cooke) Ryvardeen | E1  | 1                                   |    |
|   |  | <i>S. paradoxa</i> (Schrad.) Donk                                     | E1  | 1, 2, 3, 4                          |    |
|   |  | <i>Tubulicrinaceae</i>  | <i>Hyphodontia sambuci</i> (Pers.) J. Erikss. | E2d                                 | 2  |
|   |  | Polyporales   | Fomitopsidaceae                               | <i>Antrodia serialis</i> (Fr.) Donk | E1 |
| Ganodermataceae                               | <i>Laetiporus sulphureus</i> (Bull.) Murrill                           |   | E1  | 1, 3                                |    |
|   | <i>Ganoderma lipsiense</i> (Batsch) G.F. Atk.                          |   | E1  | 2                                   |    |
| Meruliaceae                                   | <i>G. lucidum</i> (Curtis) P. Karst.                                   |   | E1  | 4                                   |    |
|   | <i>Bjerkandera adusta</i> (Willd.) P.Karst.                            |   | E1  | 1, 2                                |    |
|   | <i>Phlebia radiata</i> Fr.   |   | E2d   | 1, 2                                |    |
| Phanerochaetaceae                             | <i>P. tremellosa</i> (Schrad.) Nakasone et Burds.                      |   | E1  | 2, 4                                |    |
|   | <i>Irpex lacteus</i> (Fr.) Fr.   |   | E2d   | 2                                   |    |
| Polyporaceae                                  | <i>Steccherinum fimbriatum</i> (Pers.) J. Erikss.                      |   | E1  | 2                                   |    |
|   | <i>S. ochraceum</i> (Pers. ex J.F. Gmel.) Gray                         |   | E1  | 2                                   |    |
|   | <i>Cerrena unicolor</i> (Bull.) Murrill                                |   | E2d   | 1, 2, 3                             |    |
|   | <i>Daedaleopsis confragosa</i> (Bolton) J. Schröt.                     |   | E2d   | 2                                   |    |
|   | <i>D. confragosa</i> var. <i>tricolor</i> (Bull.) Bondartsev et Singer |   | E2d   | 1, 4                                |    |
|   | <i>Fomes fomentarius</i> (L.) Fr.                                      |   | E2d   | 1, 2                                |    |
|   | <i>Lenzites betulina</i> (L.) Fr.                                      |   | E2d   | 2                                   |    |
|   | <i>Polyporus alveolaris</i> (DC.) Bondartsev et Singer                 | E2d   | 1, 2, 3                                       |                                     |    |
|   | <i>P. squamosus</i> (Huds.) Fr.  | E2d   | 2   |                                     |    |
|   | <i>P. tuberaster</i> (Jacq. ex Pers.) Fr.                              | E2d   | 3   |                                     |    |
| <i>Trametes gibbosa</i> (Pers.) Fr.           | E2d  | 1   |   |                                     |    |
| <i>T. ochracea</i> (Pers.) Gilb. Et Ryvardeen | E1   | 2   |   |                                     |    |
| <i>T. versicolor</i> (L.) Lloyd               | E1   | 2   |   |                                     |    |
| <i>Trichaptum bifforme</i> (Fr.) Ryvardeen    | E2d  | 1   |   |                                     |    |
| Russulales                                    | Amylostereaceae  | <i>Artomyces pyxidatus</i> (Pers.) Jülich                             | E2d   | 2                                   |    |
|   | Bondarzewiaceae  | <i>Heterobasidium annosum</i> (Fr.) Bref.                             | E2c   | 2                                   |    |
|   | Peniophoraceae   | <i>Peniophora cinerea</i> (Pers.) Cooke                               | E2d   | 3                                   |    |
|   |  | <i>P. laeta</i> (Fr.) Donk  | E2d   | 3                                   |    |
|   |  | <i>P. quercina</i> (Pers.) Cooke                                      | E2d   | 1, 2, 3, 4                          |    |
|   |  | <i>P. rufomarginata</i> (Pers.) Bourdot et Galzin                     | S   | 3                                   |    |
|   |  | <i>Stereum gausapatum</i> (Fr.) Fr.                                   | S   | 4                                   |    |
| Stereaceae                                    | <i>S. hirsutum</i> (Willd.) Pers.                                      | E2d   | 1, 2, 3                                       |                                     |    |
|   | <i>S. subtomentosum</i> Pouzar   | E2d   | 1   |                                     |    |
| Xylariales                                    | Xylariaceae  | <i>Xylaria polymorpha</i> (Pers.) Grev.                               | E2d   | 1                                   |    |

Note: \* Eurytrophes of I rank (E1), eurytrophes of II rank on deciduous trees (E2d), eurytrophes of II rank on coniferous trees (E2c), stenotrophes (S).

Appendix 2. Distribution of xylotrophic fungi by myco-horizons at all experimental plots.

| No.                             | Fungi-consorts   | Trees-edicators of consortium |       |       |       |      | Myco-horizons |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
|---------------------------------|--|-------------------------------|-------|-------|-------|------|---------------|----------|-----------|-----------|-----------|--|--|--|--|
|                                 |  | 1                             | 2     | 3     | 4     | 5    | 1             | 2        | 3         | 4         | 5         |  |  |  |  |
| 1                               | <i>Antridium seriale</i> (Fr.) Donk.                                   |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 2                               | <i>Antomyces pyxidatus</i> (Pers.) Jülich                              |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 3                               | <i>Auricularia auricula-judae</i> (Bull.) Quel.                        |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 4                               | <i>Bjerkandera adusta</i> (Willd.) P. Karst.                           |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 5                               | <i>Cerrena unicolor</i> (Bull.) Murrill                                |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 6                               | <i>Corticium roseum</i> Pers.  |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 7                               | <i>Cylindrobasidium evobens</i> (Fr.) Jülich                           |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 8                               | <i>Daedaleopsis confragosa</i> (Bolton) J. Schröt.                     |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 9                               | <i>D. confragosa</i> var. <i>tricolor</i> (Bull.) Bondartsev et Singer |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 10                              | <i>Dendrothele acerina</i> (Pers.) P. A. Lemke                         |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 11                              | <i>D. alliacea</i> (Quél.) P. A. Lemke                                 |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 12                              | <i>Fistulina hepatica</i> (Schaeff.) With.                             |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 13                              | <i>Fomes fomentarius</i> (L.) Fr.                                      |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 14                              | <i>Ganoderma liposense</i> (Batsch) G. F. Atk.                         |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 15                              | <i>G. lucidum</i> (Curtis) P. Karst.                                   |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 16                              | <i>Heterobasidium annosum</i> (Fr.) Bref.                              |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 17                              | <i>Hymenochaete rubiginosa</i> (Dicks.) Lévé.                          |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 18                              | <i>Hyphodontia sambuci</i> (Pers.) J. Erikss.                          |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 19                              | <i>Inocutis dryophila</i> (Berk.) Fiasson et Niemelä                   |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 20                              | <i>Inonotus hispidus</i> (Bull.) P. Karst.                             |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 21                              | <i>I. radiatus</i> (Sowerby) P. Karst.                                 |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 22                              | <i>Irpex lacreus</i> (Fr.) Fr.   |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 23                              | <i>Lenzites betulina</i> (L.) Fr.                                      |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 24                              | <i>Laetiporus sulphureus</i> (Bull.) Murrill                           |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 25                              | <i>Peniophora cinerea</i> (Pers.) Cooke                                |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 26                              | <i>P. laeta</i> (Fr.) Donk   |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 27                              | <i>P. quercina</i> (Pers.) Cooke                                       |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 28                              | <i>P. rubromarginata</i> (Pers.) Bourdot et Galzin                     |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 29                              | <i>Phellinus ferruginosus</i> (Schad.) Pat.                            |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 30                              | <i>P. robustus</i> (P. Karst.) Bourdot et Galzin                       |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 31                              | <i>P. tuberculosus</i> (Bäumg.) Niemelä                                |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 32                              | <i>Phlebia radiata</i> Fr.   |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 33                              | <i>P. remelosa</i> (Schrad.) Nakasone et Burds.                        |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 34                              | <i>Pluteus cervinus</i> (Schaeff.) P. Kumm.                            |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 35                              | <i>Polyporus aevolans</i> (DC.) Bondartsev et Singer                   |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 36                              | <i>P. squamosus</i> (Huds.) Fr.  |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 37                              | <i>P. tuberaster</i> (Jacq. ex Pers.) Fr.                              |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 38                              | <i>Radulomyces molaris</i> (Chaillat ex Fr.) Christ.                   |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 39                              | <i>Schizophyllum commune</i> Fr.                                       |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 40                              | <i>Schizophora flavipora</i> (Berk. et M.A. Curtis ex Cooke) Ryvarden  |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 41                              | <i>S. paradoxa</i> (Schrad.) Donk                                      |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 42                              | <i>Steccherinum fimbriatum</i> (Pers.) J. Erikss.                      |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 43                              | <i>S. ochraceum</i> (Pers. ex J.F. Gmel.) Gray                         |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 44                              | <i>Stereum gausapatum</i> (Fr.) Fr.                                    |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 45                              | <i>S. hirsutum</i> (Willd.) Pers.                                      |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 46                              | <i>S. submontanum</i> Pourzar  |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 47                              | <i>Trametes gibbosa</i> (Pers.) Fr.                                    |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 48                              | <i>T. ochracea</i> (Pers.) Gib. Et Ryvarden                            |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 49                              | <i>T. versicolor</i> (L.) Lloyd  |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 50                              | <i>Trichaptum biforme</i> (Fr.) Ryvarden                               |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 51                              | <i>Vuilleminia comedens</i> (Nees) Maire                               |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| 52                              | <i>Xylaria polymorpha</i> (Pers.) Grev.                                |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |
| All together species /findings: |  | 0/0                           | 36/93 | 15/37 | 17/49 | 9/45 | 0/0           | 70/641.5 | 29.4/16.5 | 33.3/21.9 | 17.6/20.1 |  |  |  |  |
| % of species /findings:         |  |                               |       |       |       |      |               |          |           |           |           |  |  |  |  |

Note: \* - psz./%; 1 - root; 2 - ground; 3 - boot; 4 - stem; 5 - photosynthesizing myco-horizon; " - not detected.

## Hollow tree fire is a useless forest fire category

Ivan Chromek<sup>1</sup>, Karolina Lukášová<sup>2\*</sup>, Roman Berčák<sup>2</sup>, Jan Vaněk<sup>2</sup>, Jaroslav Holuša<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Technical University in Zvolen, Faculty of Wood Sciences and Technology, T. G. Masaryka 2117/24, SK – 960 53 Zvolen, Slovak Republic

<sup>2</sup>Czech University of Life Sciences Prague, Faculty of Forestry and Wood Sciences, Kamýcká 129, CZ – 165 00 Prague 6 – Suchbát, Czech Republic

---

### Abstract

In the Czech Republic and Slovakia, the term “hollow tree fire“ was first used in a publication in 1956 without being well defined and was then uncritically used in other publications. The term refers to fires occurring in the rotted, inner trunks of trees. The main aim of the current study was to determine whether the term should be considered a useful category for the statistical analysis of forest fires. The nature and causes of fires from 2006–2015 were assessed by performing a detailed analysis of the Fire Rescue Service of the Czech Republic (FRS CR) database. The database included a total of 7,256 fires in the natural environment, but only 18 of these were hollow tree fires. Most hollow tree fires were initiated by human carelessness, and only three were initiated by lightning. Based on our critical consideration of fire attributes, hollow tree fires should not be considered a category of forest fire. The presence of rotten trees is, however, a serious problem because such trees represent long-lasting sources of fire in forest stands and because they complicate firefighting. The numbers of rotten trees in forests is increasing, and firefighters should be made aware of the complications of extinguishing fires involving rotten trees in forests.

**Keywords:** rot; damage; firefighting; Norway spruce; central Europe

---

Editor: Milan Zúbrik

---

### 1. Introduction

The term forest fire refers to fire that breaks out in and spreads through forests and other wooded land or that breaks out in nonwooded land and spreads to forests and other wooded land. The definition of “forest fire“ excludes prescribed or controlled burning, which is usually conducted to reduce or eliminate the accumulated fuel on the ground (Regulation (EC) No 2152/2003 of the European Parliament). More generally, a forest fire is a complex of physico-chemical phenomena involving burning, gas exchange, and heat transfer processes that change in space and time. Forest fires have negative effects on all of the social functions of forests (Chromek 2006).

In the Czech Republic and Slovakia, forest fires are assigned to one of four categories (Nechleba 1927; Nestěrov 1949; Hendrych 1956; Pfeffer et al. 1961; Kunt 1967; Forst 1970; Stolina et al. 1985, 2001; Hlaváč 2003, 2005; Krakovský 2004; Chromek 2006; Franc 2007; Kula & Jankovská 2013; Hlaváč & Chromek 2016; see Table 1): surface fires (“pozemní požár” in Czech), ground fires

(“podzemní požár”), crown fires (“korunový požár”), and hollow tree fires (“požár dutého stromu”).

In 2005, another kind of forest fire, a “calamity area fire”, was described (Hlaváč et al. 2005). This kind of forest fire results from many broken trees after storm winds and anthropogenic ignition, factors that were responsible for the severe fire in the High Tatras Mts in 2005. This kind of forest fire has not been recognized as a new category of fire, although its legitimacy was very well reasoned (Hlaváč et al. 2005).

The areas affected by surface fires, ground fires, crown fires, and calamity area fires are quantified annually at the national level in the Czech Republic and Slovakia (vulhm.cz; los.sk) as well as at the European level The European Forest Fire Information System – EFFIS. In contrast to these kinds of fires, which damage thousands of hectares, “hollow tree fires” initially affect only individual trees (Hendrych 1956; Pfeffer et al. 1961; Krakovský 2004; see Table 1) and cause negligible damage and loss. The Czech term for this kind of fire is “požár dutého stromu”, and the term “hollow tree fire” will be used in this paper. This term was first used but was not

---

\*Corresponding author. Karolina Lukášová, e-mail: [lukasovak@fd.czu.cz](mailto:lukasovak@fd.czu.cz), phone: +420 737 322 550

clearly defined by Hendrych (1956). Since that time, the term hollow tree fire has been used without critical evaluation in many publications (Table 1).

**Table 1.** Overview of publications describing hollow tree fires and other kinds of forest fires in the Czech Republic and Slovakia. In the Hollow tree fires column, + or - indicates that hollow tree fires were or were not described, respectively. In the Types of forest fires column, + or - indicates that the type of fire was or was not indicated, respectively.

| Author             | Year of publication | Hollow tree fires | Types of forest fires |
|--------------------|---------------------|-------------------|-----------------------|
| Kučera             | 1914                | –                 | –                     |
| Nechleba           | 1927                | –                 | +                     |
| Barchánek          | 1932                | –                 | –                     |
| Pfeffer            | 1938                | –                 | –                     |
| Felix              | 1948                | –                 | –                     |
| M. M.              | 1948                | –                 | –                     |
| Něstěrov           | 1949                | –                 | +                     |
| Turček & Lehotan   | 1949                | –                 | –                     |
| Hendrych           | 1956                | +                 | +                     |
| Pfeffer            | 1961                | +                 | +                     |
| Hodr               | 1963                | +                 | +                     |
| Kunt               | 1967                | +                 | +                     |
| Forst              | 1970                | +                 | +                     |
| Kula               | 1981                | –                 | –                     |
| Stolina            | 1985                | +                 | +                     |
| Kula               | 1985a               | –                 | –                     |
| Kula               | 1985b               | –                 | –                     |
| Pohořelý & Vilhelm | 1996                | –                 | +                     |
| Stolina et al.     | 2001                | +                 | +                     |
| Křístek            | 2002                | +                 | +                     |
| Hlaváč             | 2003                | +                 | +                     |
| Franc              | 2004                | –                 | –                     |
| Krakovský          | 2004                | +                 | +                     |
| Sloup & Raba       | 2004                | –                 | –                     |
| Sviták             | 2004                | –                 | –                     |
| Tomášek            | 2004                | –                 | –                     |
| Hlaváč             | 2005a               | +                 | +                     |
| Hlaváč             | 2005b               | +                 | +                     |
| Hlaváč et al.      | 2005                | –                 | –                     |
| Chromek            | 2006                | –                 | +                     |
| Francel            | 2007                | –                 | +                     |
| Tomášek            | 2007                | –                 | –                     |
| Hlaváč et al.      | 2009                | –                 | –                     |
| Kula & Jankovská   | 2013                | –                 | +                     |
| Hlaváč & Chromek   | 2016                | +                 | +                     |
| Machander          | 2016                | –                 | –                     |

Given the need for detailed analyses of the causes and natures of fires, the question arises as to whether the hollow tree fire should be recognized as a category of forest fire. The aim of this work is to quantify this kind of fire in the Czech Republic and to determine whether it warrants being recognized as a category of forest fire. The significance of rotten trees is also considered.

## 2. Material and methods

The database of fires from the territory of the Czech Republic for the period 2006–2015 was studied. The forest fire database was provided by the Fire Rescue

Service of the Czech Republic, which is hereafter abbreviated FRS CR. The database contains information for all natural environmental fires in the territory of the Czech Republic, with the exception of areas controlled by the military or by the Ministry of Defense.

The unadjusted database contained a large amount of information on each individual fire. The data include information about the fire category, the level of alarm that was announced, the date and time of the announcement, the date and time when the fire was extinguished, the location of the fire (region, district, municipality, part of municipality, coordinates), and ownership of damaged property (state, private, etc.). The data also include information on the intervention (number of fire units, fire area, direct damage, etc.), specification of fire location (fire in the natural environment, fire outside a building, etc.), initiator, cause, and comments.

We also searched online resources through Google.com search engines using the keywords “požár” (fire), “strom” (tree), and “dutý” (hollow) as a single search term (Appendix A1).

## 3. Results

Between 2006 and 2015, the FRS CR database included records for 7,256 fires in the natural environment. Only 18 of the 7,256 (i.e., 0.25%) could be considered hollow tree fires, and these involved a total area of 26 m<sup>2</sup> in forest stands. Most hollow tree fires in forest stands were recorded in 2007 and were usually started by human carelessness involving matches or lighters cases; hollow tree fires were started by lightning in only three cases. Most of the hollow tree fires required < 3 h to extinguish (Table 2).

The hollow tree fires involved beech (*Fagus sylvatica* L.) in four cases, Norway spruce (*Picea abies* L. [Karst.]) in two cases, and unrecorded species in the other cases. All 18 fires were reported between 8 am and 24 pm (Fig. 1). The fires occurred from April to December but most occurred in July (Fig. 2). The registered total damage was CZK 6,000 (approximately EUR 230), and assets valued at CZK 770,000 (EUR 29,468) were saved.

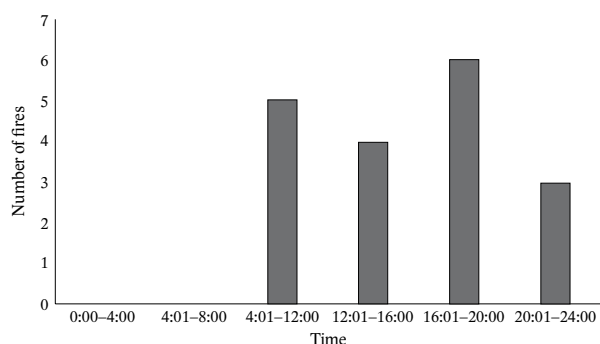
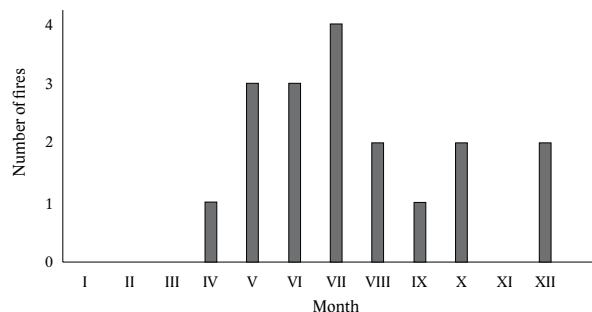
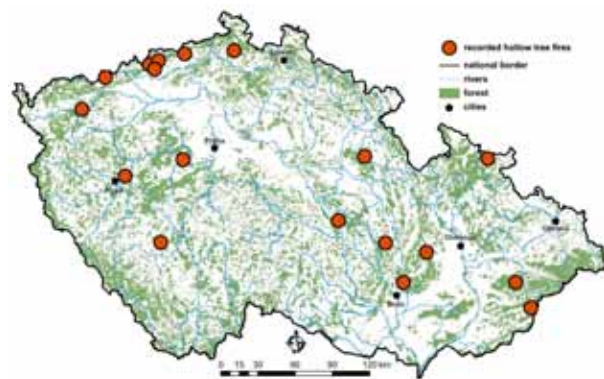
According to the FRS CR database and internet sources (Appendix A1), 11 other cases of hollow tree fires were recorded between 2006 and 2015 outside of forests<sup>1</sup>; these most often occurred in urban areas or parks (five cases in 2015 in total). The hollow tree fires were distributed randomly of the Czech Republic from 2006 to 2015 (Fig. 3).

<sup>1</sup> Forests are defined as land with tree crown cover (or equivalent stocking level) of more than 10% and area of more than 0.5 ha. The trees should be able to reach a minimum height of 5 m at maturity in situ. (Regulation (EC) No 2152/2003 of the European Parliament).

**Table 2.** Information on hollow tree fires occurring in forests in the Czech Republic from 2006 to 2015.

|                            | Details                 | Number of fires |
|----------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------|
| Year of occurrence         | 2006                    | 1               |
|                            | 2007                    | 5               |
|                            | 2008                    | 1               |
|                            | 2009                    | 2               |
|                            | 2010                    | 0               |
|                            | 2011                    | 0               |
|                            | 2012                    | 2               |
|                            | 2013                    | 2               |
|                            | 2014                    | 2               |
|                            | 2015                    | 3               |
| Initiator                  | Matches, lighters*      | 6               |
|                            | Cigarette butt          | 2               |
|                            | Atmospheric discharge** | 3               |
| Maximum extinguishing time | Unresolved              | 7               |
|                            | 30 minutes              | 2               |
|                            | 1 hour                  | 7               |
|                            | 3 hours                 | 8               |
|                            | 12 hours                | 1               |

\*In two cases, the fires were ignited by children under 15; one case involved intentional ignition.  
\*\*lightning.

**Fig. 1.** Number of hollow tree fires in the Czech forests from 2006–2015 as affected by time of day.**Fig. 2.** Number of hollow tree fires in the Czech forests from 2006–2015 as affected by month of year.**Fig. 3.** Locations of hollow tree fires in the Czech Republic from 2006–2015.

#### 4. Causes of a hollow fire occurrence

We consider tree damage and rot and their relationship to fire in the following paragraphs.

When rocks impact trees, different types of tree failure can occur, including uprooting and trunk breakage (Berger et al. 2002). Certain species, particularly angiosperms, appear to be more resistant to failure than others and often sustain minor rather than severe wounds (Dorren & Berger 2005). The larger the tree, the smaller the percentage of cambial damage that will occur. Some broadleaf species are able to produce scar tissue faster than fir or spruce. This scar tissue will form around the wound and protect it from pathogen attack (Shigo 1986). Wounds on silver fir (*Abies alba* Mill.) and Norway spruce are relatively susceptible to pathogens, leading to internal stem rot and decay and then to reduced mechanical resistance to rockfall. Thick bark can protect the living cambium from wounding (Guyette & Stambaugh 2004). Damage from rockfall is not a widespread problem; it tends to occur only in the isolated cirques in high mountains with steep rocky slopes, as in the Giant Mts. and Bohemian Forest Mts. in the Czech Republic (Hrádek et al. 1997).

As amended under Section 20 (1) N) of Act No. 289/1995 Coll., On Forests and on Amendment and Supplementation of Certain Acts (Forestry Act), it is forbidden to graze cattle in forests or to allow cattle to move through forests in the Czech Republic.

Grazing of cattle has a long history in the Czech Republic (Svoboda 1952), but precise information on its occurrence is lacking. Although peeling, the rubbing of trunks by horns, and the trampling of roots by hooves have recently occurred in the Carpathians (Křístek 2008), quantitative data are lacking, and this kind of damage is rarely reported in scientific publications (e.g., Lutz 1980; Okada et al. 2007). There is also evidence of bark-stripping by horses in neighboring Poland (Kuiters et al. 2006; Klich 2017).

Bark-stripping and bark-peeling in European conifers by deer (*Cervus elaphus* L.) (Pfeffer et al. 1961; McIntyre 1972; Homolka 1995; Welsch et al. 1997) is an increasing problem in many European countries and elsewhere (e.g., see Mitchell et al. 1977; Mayer & Ott 1991; Donaubaauer 1994; Reimoser 2003; Mansson & Jarnemo 2013). Some tree species, such as fir and ash (*Fraxinus* sp.), have been debarked by European bison (Klich 2015).

Each logging system can cause a different kind of damage to remaining trees. Because it potentially reduces tree vigour and increases attack by insects or diseases, logging injury to the remaining trees may lead to serious economic losses (Ohman 1970; Vasiliauskas 2001). Skinned bark and exposed sapwood, damaged roots, and broken branches are the most common forms of damage (Vasiliauskas & Stenlid 2007). Damage may decrease the quality of residual trees and increase stand mortality

through insect and disease infestation (Han & Kellogg 2000; Kiser 2011). Wounding can cause stem deformity and decay and significantly reduce final crop volume and value (Meadows 1993). Stem wounds and root damage are also potential means of entry for organisms causing decay and pitch rings (Shigo 1986).

When fungi invade a wound caused by mechanical damage, they reduce wood hardness, texture, and color. Rot arises because fungi secrete a wide range of extracellular enzymes that degrade host tissues (Eriksson & Pettersson 1968; Nord & Hata 1969; Hüttermann 1980; Johansson 1988; Karlsson & Stenlid 1991; Majjala et al. 1995; Asiegbu et al. 1998; Korhonen & Stenlid 1998; Majjala et al. 2003; Asiegbu et al. 2004).

*Stereum sanguinolentum* (Alb. & Schwein.) Fr. is the most common decay fungus of Norway spruce. This fungus is able to infect open wounds of live trees (Isomäki & Kallio 1974; Atta & Hayes 1987; Mäkinen et al. 2007). The spread and extent of the attack depend on the frequency of damage, wound age, and tree diameter at breast height (Vlad & Sidor 2013; Vlad 2014). Other important fungal pathogens include *Heterobasidion* species, which cause destructive diseases of conifers in the northern temperate regions of the world, especially in Europe (Asiegbu et al. 2005). *Heterobasidion* spp. also attack wounds, especially those caused by logging (Rönnerberg et al. 2013).

Fungal pathogens can grow rapidly through infected trees. *S. sanguinolentum*, for example, can spread up to 70 cm per year in tree trunks (Čermák et al. 2004a, b, c; Čermák & Strejček 2007), and *Heterobasidion* spp. can spread up to 1 m yr<sup>-1</sup> in tree trunks and can grow into the trunk from infected roots (Huse & Venn 1994). The rot caused by these pathogens spreads upward through the mature, middle part of the trunk (Černý 1989; Čermák et al. 2004b).

Rotted wood is 2.0- to 2.5-times lighter in weight than healthy wood. In addition to reducing the mechanical strength of wood, rot also changes wood color and appearance (Zeidler 2012). The rotting of wood by fungi increases its ability to burn. That fire is usually initiated by lightning or arson (Hendrych 1956; Krakovský 2004) is confirmed by our records for hollow tree fires.

When lightning strikes a healthy tree, it causes mechanical damage, but when lightning strikes a tree with rot in the trunk, it causes fire. The natural occurrence of forest fires resulting from lightning striking a dry or hollow tree is rare in the Czech Republic (Nechleba 1927; Kula 1985a). Only 2% of the forest fires were caused by lightning in 2015 (Zpráva o stavu lesa a lesního hospodářství České republiky v roce 2015 2016). This is consistent with past records. From 1992–2004, for example, Kula & Jankovská (2013) reported that lightning caused only 1.39% of forest fires in the Czech Republic.

In 1970, 70,000 ha of spruce stands in the Czech Republic had significant levels of game damage (Černý 2001). The area of such damaged stands had increased

to 106,000 ha by 1994 and to 220,000 ha by 1999. At the beginning of the 21st century in the Czech Republic, it was estimated that more than 20% of the total volume of harvested timber (Půlpán 2001) was damaged by rotting. The losses due to rot have continued to increase (Malík & Karnet 2007).

According to the National Forest Inventory for the period 2014–2016, more than 13% of the trees between 41 to 60 years old in the Czech Republic had been damaged by browsing, peeling, or rubbing, and 8% of all trees in the country were damaged, regardless of age (Table 3). The damage increases with altitude (Table 4) Kučera et al. 2016.

**Table 3.** Percentage of trees damaged by browsing, peeling, or rubbing as affected by age class in the territory of the Czech Republic (2014–2016).

| Age of forest | Browsing, peeling, or rubbing [%] |
|---------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1–20          | 7.2                               |
| 21–40         | 11.0                              |
| 41–60         | 13.9                              |
| 61–80         | 8.9                               |
| 81–100        | 5.3                               |
| >100          | 1.7                               |
| Total         | 8.2                               |

**Table 4.** Percentage of trees damaged by browsing, peeling, or rubbing as affected by altitude in the Czech Republic (2014–2016).

| Altitude [m]  | Browsing, peeling, or rubbing [%] |
|---------------|-----------------------------------|
| less than 400 | 3.5                               |
| 400–700       | 7.6                               |
| >700          | 17.2                              |

In the case of forest fires in stands with rotting trees, flames can spread over the surface of the forest litter and ignite trees at the base of the trunk. The ideal condition for spread occurs when an ignited tree has a hole in the upper part of its trunk, creating a so-called „chimney effect“ (Pfeffer et al. 1961; Forst et al. 1970).

Although extinguishing a single, burning hollow tree is not complicated, some precautions should be followed. The trees must be felled (Fig. 4a) and, for safety, guided blasting charges (Fig. 4b) are used [see Staré Hory 2007 (enclosed pictures - Forests of the Slovak Republic, (Fig. 4c)]. Burned and felled trees must also be repeatedly inspected to ensure that they are extinguished (Fig. 4d). Even after the front of a forest fire passes through these trees, rotten trees may continue to burn and may activate the forest fire (Fig. 4e).

For reasons of safety, pyrotechnics is necessary (Fig. 4b). In such cases - directed burst charges, lightning bolts are also used for the destruction of such trees.

It is often safer to use explosive charges (for every 10 cm of stem thickness, single spin, thread) rather than axes and saws to fell rotten trees that have burned or are still burning.

Even when they are felled, however, the cavities of burning hollow trees may contain fire. The hidden fires in such trees create a so-called “cigarette effect” (Fig. 4c), and the felled trunks must be repeatedly checked and





**Fig. 4.** Extinguishing burning trees with rot near the village of Staré Hory (Velká Fatra) on 15 April 2007 (48.8587644N, 19.1457272E) (Masica 2007) (photo I. Chromek). (A) Preparation cuts in the burning tree; (B) The use of explosive charges on a hollow tree with an inner fire at the top; (C) A tree with rot continues to burn even after it has been felled; (D) A hollow tree fire that has been extinguished; (E) A rotten tree that is still burning after the forest fire has moved through the area; and (F) A rotten tree in which the fire has been extinguished.

sprayed with water. This problem is especially important after the front of a forest fire has passed through an area (Fig. 4d) because, as noted earlier, the hidden fire in the rotten trees (Fig. 4e) can continue to burn even after it has been assumed to be extinguished. The hidden fire can then help reactivate the forest fire.

Therefore, both the standing and lying trunks must be checked. The above-mentioned method of fire for-

est destruction is time-consuming but also demanding for personnel and water (up to 200 l of water per m<sup>2</sup> is required). An area with such trees must be repeatedly inspected. Rotten trees that have burned but are still standing are also dangerous because they are unstable and can fall on firefighters (Fig. 4f). Another risk involves rotten roots, which can burn and spread the fire ground (Pfeffer et al. 1961).



## 5. Discussion

The number of hollow tree fires was very small in the Czech Republic (and is probably also very small in other countries of Central Europe), suggesting that this type of fire should not be considered as a separate category of forest fire. Rather than being recognized as a separate category, perhaps hollow tree fires should be considered as a part of other types of forest fires.

Hollow trees fires occur on trees with damage and rot. Tree injury results from mechanical damage to the trunk due to falling stones; peeling caused by sheep, goats, beef cattle, or game; or poor handling by foresters during cleaning, thinning, and logging<sup>2</sup>.

From 2006–2015, only three cases of hollow tree fires caused by lightning were documented in the FRS CR database, representing only 0.04% of all forest fires. Among all of the forest fires in the database, lightning caused a total of 96 fires, i.e., 1.32% of all fires.

Forests in the Czech Republic are intensively managed, and most forest fires are caused by human activity and not by lightning (Kula & Jankovská 2013). The chances that fire is caused by lightning in the Northern Hemisphere increase with latitude. In areas just south of the Arctic Circle, lightning causes up to 90% of the natural fires (Post 1936). Because there are few people near the Arctic Circle, humans are unlikely cause fires in that region. In addition, that region has conditions that are extremely favorable for forest fires. The polar day in Alaska, for example, has 19 to 24 h of sunshine and temperatures as high as 37.3°C, while the average annual precipitation is < 382 mm (Kunt 1967).

Earlier reports indicate that hollow tree fires in some countries have often been caused by shepherds who intentionally started fires in hollow trees (Pfeffer et al. 1961). We did not find any information in the scientific literature about whether shepherds intentionally started fires in hollow trees in Central Europe. Nechleba (1927) mentions that the careless manipulation of fire by human minors was often a cause of forest fires. In some cases, minors have intentionally started fires in tree cavities (e.g., see <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XqnHRA-XNGw>). This trend is evident today; from years 1974–1983, minors were responsible for approximately 7% of forest fires (Kula 1985a). In the years 1992–2004, the percentage decreased to 4.5% (Kula & Jankovská 2013).

In the case of hollow tree fires, the tree burns to the height of the cavity or rot. If the cavity is at the bottom of the trunk, only this part burns. If the rot occurs higher, the fire

can move up the stem and emerge from holes and cracks (<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=LbxCFIbsKy0>) (see Appendix A2)), from wounds (<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=p1dgewYCECU>; <http://www.wideopencountry.com/insane-footage-tree-fire-inside/>; Fig. 4), and from holes formed by woodpeckers (<http://vtecostudies.org/blog/spring-wildfire/>).

Extinguishing a single burning tree is not a complicated procedure (Krakovský 2004). Some older reports recommend clogging all holes in the hollow trunk with soil, or cutting down the tree and then extinguishing the fire (Hendrych 1956). There is currently no official way of dealing with hollow tree fires in the Czech Republic. In terms of felling, a burning hollow tree is generally felled in the same manner as a non-burning hollow tree (Appendix A3).

In some circumstances, the hollow tree can break apart or burst, such that hot coals fall to the litter and cause a surface fire (Hendrych 1956). If the surface fire spreads to young coniferous stands, a crown fire can develop, and a relatively small problem can become a large one (Pfeffer et al. 1961). In this case, the hollow tree fire becomes the source of a regular forest fire.

Although hollow tree fires are rare, hollow trees in forests commonly burn during forest fires. The occurrence of forest fires with burning rotten trees will increase as a consequence of the increasing area of forest stands with game damage. Game damage leads to rot. Trees damaged by game are more likely to be attacked by *S. sanquinolentum* (Čermák et al. 2004a, b; Čermák & Strejček 2007).

## 6. Conclusion

Hollow tree fires are rare in the Czech Republic and lack many characteristics common to forest fires such as burnt area, head, flanks, and back of fire (Krakovský 2004). They also have relatively small economic and environmental consequences. We therefore conclude that hollow tree fires should not be considered a category of forest fire.

A stand-alone tree in a meadow would not be considered a forest, and if such a tree is ignited, it could not be called a forest fire. Similarly, if a hollow tree is ignited in a forest and burns without spreading, the event would not be considered a forest fire and would not generally be registered. If the fire spreads, it is by definition a forest fire and is no longer a hollow tree fire. We also note that hollow tree fires are not recognized as a category of forest fire in most of the countries in Central Europe, which only

<sup>2</sup> In the USA, fire can also produce tree damage in the form of basal cavities, which are ubiquitous in coast redwoods. They are common in the humid coastal forests of Del Norte County of California and also in the dry forests of the southernmost extent of the species range. Cavities result from a complex interaction between repeated fires and decay associated with two fungi, *Poria sequoiae* and *Poria albipellucida*. Coast redwood heartwood is remarkably decay- and fire-resistant, but these fungi thrive in sapwood behind newly formed fire scars (<https://redwood.forestthreats.org/cavities.htm>).

recognize ground, surface, and crown fires as common types of forest fires (e.g., Forest Fires in Europe, Middle East and North Africa 2015)<sup>3</sup>.

On the other hand, the presence of rotten trees in forest stands is a serious threat. Such trees can become a long-lasting source of fire, and extinguishing them if they are burning is not straightforward. Because the numbers of trees with rot is increasing in the forests of the Czech Republic, firefighters should be trained in how to deal with such trees and should be advised of areas with stands where rotten trees are abundant.

## Acknowledgements

This research was supported by the National Agency for Agricultural Research within the framework of projects no. QJ1620454 administered by the Ministry of Agriculture of the Czech Republic. The authors thank Dr. Bruce Jaffee (USA) for linguistic and editorial improvements.

## References

- Asiegbu, F. O., Abu, S., Stenlid, J., Johansson, M., 2004: Sequence polymorphism and molecular characterisation of laccase genes of the conifer pathogen *Heterobasidion annosum*. *Mycological Research*, 108:136–148.
- Asiegbu, F. O., Adomas, A., Stenlid, J., 2005: Conifer root and butt rot caused by *Heterobasidion annosum* (Fr.) Bref. s.l. *Molecular Plant Pathology*, 6:395–409.
- Asiegbu, F. O., Johansson, M., Woodward, S., Hüttermann, A., 1998: Biochemistry of the host–parasite interaction. In: Woodward, S., Stenlid, J., Karjalainen, R., Hüttermann, A. (eds.): *Heterobasidion annosum: Biology, Ecology, Impact and Control*. CAB International. London, UK, p. 167–195.
- Atta, H. A., Hayes, A. J., 1987: Decay in Norway spruce caused by *Stereum sanguinolentum* Alb. & Schw. ex Fr. developing from extraction wounds. *Forestry*, 60:101–111.
- Barchánek, V., 1932: Co je příčinou lesních požárů. *Československý háj*, 9:151.
- Berger, F., Quétel, C., Dorren, L. K. A., 2002: Forest: a natural protection mean against rockfalls, but with which efficiency? In: *Proceedings of the International Congress. Pacific Rim. Matsumoto*, 2:815–826.
- Čermák, P., Glogar, J., Jankovský, L. 2004a: Damage by deer barking and browsing and subsequent rots in Norway spruce stands of Forest Range Mořkov, Forest District Frenštát p. R. (the Beskids Protected Landscape Area). *Journal of Forest Science*, 50:24–30.
- Čermák, P., Jankovský, L., Glogar, J., 2004b: Progress of spreading *Stereum sanguinolentum* (Alb. et Schw.: Fr.) Fr. wound rot and its impact on the stability of spruce stands. *Journal of Forest Science*, 50:360–365.
- Čermák, P., Jankovský, L., Lička, D., Beránek, J., Glogar, J., 2004c: Damage to spruce stands by deer barking and subsequent rots in Forest Range Proklest, the Křtiny Training Forest enterprise “Masaryk Forest” (the Drahaný upland). *Acta Universitatis Agriculturae et Silviculturae Mendelianae Brunensis, Sborník Mendelovy zemědělské a lesnické univerzity v Brně*, 2:165–174.
- Čermák, P., Strejček, M., 2007: Stem decay by *Stereum sanguinolentum* after red deer damage in the Českomoravská vrchovina Highlands. *Journal of Forest Science*, 53:567–572.
- Černý, A., 1989: *Parazitické dřevokazné houby*. Praha, SZN, 104 p.
- Černý, A., 2001: Pevník krvavějící *Haematosterum sanguinolentum* Pouz. comb. novum., významná parazitická dřevokazná houba rozšířená v jehličnatých lesích v mírných pásech na celém světě. *Reports of Forestry Research*, 46:122.
- Chromek, I., 2006: *Využitie leteckej techniky pri hasení lesných požiarov*. Zvolen, Technical University in Zvolen.
- Donaubauer, E., 1994: *Zur Wildschadenssituation in Europa*. Salzburg, Proceedings CIC tagung, 11 p.
- Dorren, L.K.A., Berger, F., 2005: Stem breakage of trees and energy dissipation during rainfall impacts. *Tree Physiology*, 26:63–71.
- Eriksson, K.E., Pettersson, B., 1968: Extracellular enzyme system utilized by the rot fungus *Stereum sanguinolentum* for the breakdown of cellulose: II. *Archives of Biochemistry and Biophysics*, 124:142–148.
- Felix, Z., 1948: *Požární ochrana lesů*. Hasičská knihovnička Jiskra, 6:100.
- Forest Fire in Europe, Middle East and North Africa, 2015 [online] [2017-03-27]: European Communities, Luxembourg, 2016.
- Forst, P., (ed.), 1970: *Ochrana lesů*. Praha, SZN, 423 p.
- Franc, R., 2004: *Prevence a hašení lesních požárů v ČR, organizace jednotek požární ochrany*. In: *Lesní požáry*. Czech University of Life Sciences Prague, p. 35–40.
- Francl, R., 2007: *Lesní požáry v České republice z pohledu hasičů*. *Lesnická práce*, 8:16–19.
- Guyette, R.P., Stambaugh, M.C., 2004: Post-oak fire scars as a function of diameter, growth, and tree age. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 198:183–192.

<sup>3</sup> In Poland, however, fires are divided into four types: 1) individual tree fires, 2) ground fires (peat, peat-muck), 3) surface fires, and 4) forest stand fires. A fire involving only one tree is extremely rare in Poland and is the result of arson or lightning strikes. In the case of arson, the fire can transform into any other kind of fire. In the case of lightning strikes, the threat of fire spread is small because lightning is usually accompanied by rain in Poland (Predecka 2011).

- Han, H. S., Kellogg, L. D., 2000: Damage characteristics in young Douglas-fir stands from commercial thinning with four timber harvesting systems. *Western Journal of Applied Forestry*, 15:27–33.
- Hendrych, V., 1956: Ochrana lesů. Praha, SZN, 260 p.
- Hlaváč, P., 2003: Človek najviac prispieva k vzniku lesných požiarov. *Enviromagazín*, 2:26–27.
- Hlavač, P., 2005a: Základné typy lesných požiaroch a jejich způsobů hašení lesným personálem. In: Kodrík, M., Hlaváč, P. (eds.): Uplatňování nových metod v ochraně lesa a ochraně krajiny. Technical University in Zvolen, p. 209–214.
- Hlavač, P., 2005b: Základné lesnícké charakteristiky protipožiarneho územia TANAP pred požiarom. In: Kodrík, M., Hlaváč, P. (eds.): Uplatňování nových metod v ochraně lesa a ochraně krajiny. Technical University in Zvolen, p. 223–227.
- Hlaváč, P., Chromek, I., 2016: Lesné požiare a integrovaný systém ochrany lesov pred požiarom. Zvolen, Technical University in Zvolen, 81 p.
- Hlaváč, P., Chromek, I., Majlingová, A., Osvald, A., 2005: Projekt protipožiarnej ochrany lesa na území Vysokých Tatier po vetrovej kalamite: realizačný projekt. Zvolen, Technical University in Zvolen, 67 p.
- Hlaváč, P., Chromek, I., Majlingová, A., 2009: Od Projektu protipožiarnej ochrany lesa vo Vysokých Tatrách po vetrovej kalamite po zmeny legislatívy v oblasti ochrany lesov pred požiarom v podmienkach Slovenskej republiky. Zvolen, Technical University in Zvolen, 145 p.
- Hodr, J., 1963: Požární ochrana v zemědělství a lesním hospodářství. Praha, SZN, 378 p.
- Homolka, M., 1995: Některé aspekty potravní ekologie vybraných druhů zvěře ve vztahu k problematice obnovy lesních ekosystémů. In: Škody zvěři a jejich řešení. The Faculty of Forestry and Wood Technology at Mendel University in Brno, p. 35–39.
- Hrádek, M., Kolejka, J., Švehlík, R., 1997: Czechia and Slovakia. In: Embleton, C., Embleton-Hamann, C. (eds.): Geomorphological Hazards of Europe. Elsevier Science. Amsterdam, Neetherlands, p. 64–66.
- Huse, K. J., Venn, K. 1994: Vertical spread of *Heterobasidion annosum* in stems of Norway spruce. In: Johansson, M., Stenlid, J. (eds.): Proceedings of the 8th IUFRO Conference on Root and Butt Rots. Swedish University of Agricultural Sciences. Uppsala, Sweden, p. 208–212.
- Hüttermann, A., 1980: Biochemical studies on *Fomes annosus*. In: Dimitri, L. (eds.): Proceedings of the Fifth IUFRO Conference on Problems of Root and Butt Rot in Conifers. Hessische Forstliche Versuchsanstalt. Hann. Münden, Germany, p. 109–123.
- Isomäki, A., Kallio, T., 1974: Consequences of injury caused by timber harvesting machines on the growth and decay of spruce (*Picea abies* [L.] Karst.). *Acta Forestalia Fennica*, 136:25.
- Johansson, M., 1988: Pectic enzyme activity of spruce (S) and pine (P) strains of *Heterobasidion annosum*. *Physiological and Molecular Plant Pathology*, 33:333–349.
- Karlsson, J.O., Stenlid, J., 1991: Pectic isozyme profiles of the intersterility groups in *Heterobasidion annosum*. *Mycological Research*, 95:531–536.
- Kiser, J., 2011: Histochemical and geometric alterations of sapwood in costal Douglas-fir following mechanical damage during commercial thinning. *Silva Fennica*, 45:729–741.
- Klich, D., 2015: Similarities in foraging patterns of wisent, red deer and various breeds of European primitive horses. *The European Bison Conservation Center Newsletter*, 8:41–51.
- Klich, D., 2017: Selective bark stripping of various tree species by Polish horses in relation to bark detachability. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 384:65–71.
- Korhonen, K., Stenlid, J., 1998: Biology of *Heterobasidion annosum*. In: Woodward, S., Stenlid, J., Karjalainen, R., Hütterman, A. (eds.): *Heterobasidion annosum*: Biology, Ecology, Impact and Control. CAB International. London, UK, p. 43–71.
- Krakovský, A., 2004: Lesné požiare. Zvolen, Technical University in Zvolen, 78 p.
- Křístek, J. (ed.), 2002: Ochrana lesů a přírodního prostředí. Písek, Matice lesnická, 386 p.
- Křístek, Š., 2008: Lesní pastva v ukrajinských Karpatech. *Lesnická práce*, 87:36–37.
- Kučera, 1914: Lesní požáry. *Háj*, 33:237–238.
- Kučera, M., Adolt, R., Kohn, I., Piškytlová, K., Kratěna, L., Fejfar, J. et al., 2016: Výstupy Národní inventarizace lesů uskutečněné v letech 2011–2015, 11. Škody zvěři na lesních porostech. *Lesnická práce*, 95.
- Kuiters, A. T., Van Der Sluijs, L. A. M., Wytema, G. A., 2006: Selective bark-stripping of beech, *Fagus sylvatica*, by free-ranging horses. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 222:1–8.
- Kula, E., 1981: Lesní požáry v ČSSR. *Lesnictví*, 27:545–566.
- Kula, E., 1985a: Výskyt a příčiny lesních požárů v ČSSR (1979–1983). *Acta Universitatis Agriculturae et Silviculturae Mendelianae Brunensis*, series C, 54:225–246.
- Kula, E., 1985b: Výskyt a příčiny lesních požárů v ČSSR (1979–1983). *Acta Universitatis Agriculturae et Silviculturae Mendelianae Brunensis*, series C, 54:225–246.
- Kula, E., Jankovská, Z., 2013: Forest fires and their causes in the Czech Republic (1992–2004). *Journal of Forest Science*, 59:41–53.
- Kunt, A., 1967: Lesní požáry. Prague, Československý svaz požární ochrany, 313 p.
- Lutz, H. J., 1980: Effect of cattle grazing on vegetation of a virgin forest in Northwestern Pennsylvania. *Journal of Agricultural Research*, 41:561–570.
- M., M., 1948: Boj proti lesním požárům. *Lesnická práce*, 27:264–266.
- Machander, V., 2016: Požáry lesních porostů a jejich prevence. *Zpravodaj LOS*, 16:51–55.

- Maijala, P., Raudaskoski, M., Viikari, L., 1995: Hemicellulolytic enzymes in P- and S-strains of *Heterobasidion annosum*. *Microbiology*, 141:743–750.
- Maijala, P., Harrington, T.C., Raudaskoski, M., 2003: A peroxidase gene family and gene trees in *Heterobasidion* and related genera. *Mycologia*, 95:209–221.
- Mäkinen, H., Hallaksela, A.M., Isomäki, A., 2007: Increment and decay in Norway spruce and Scots pine after artificial logging damage. *Canadian Journal of Forest Research*, 37:2130–2141.
- Malík, V., Karnet, P., 2007: Game damage to forest trees. *Journal of Forest Science*, 53:406–412.
- Mansson, J., Jarnemo, A., 2013: Bark-stripping on Norway spruce by red deer in Sweden: level of damage and relation to tree characteristics. *Scandinavian Journal of Forest Research*, 28:117–125.
- Masica, V., 2007 [online] [2017-08-16]: Lesný požiar Staré Hory. ForestPortál o lesoch Slovenska.
- Mayer, H., Ott, E. K., 1991: Gebirgswaldbau - Schutzwaldpflege. Ein waldbaulicher Beitrag zur Landschaftsökologie und zum Umweltschutz, 2., vollständig neu bearb. Stuttgart, Fischer, 587 p.
- McIntyre, E. B., 1972: Barkstripping – a natural phenomenon. *Scottish Forestry*, 26:43–50.
- Meadows, J. S., 1993: Logging damage to residual trees following partial cutting in a green ash-sugarberry stand in the Mississippi Delta. In: Proceedings of 9th Central Hardwood Forest Conference, USDA Forest Service, Southern Forest Experiment Station, U.S., p. 248–260.
- Mitchell, B., Staines, B. W., Welch, D., 1977: Ecology of red deer – A research review relevant to their management in Scotland. Cambridge, Institute of Terrestrial Ecology, 74 p.
- Nechleba, A., 1927: Lesní požáry. Sborník CAZ II, 4:569–651.
- Nestěrov, V.G., 1949: Ochrana proti požiarom. Bratislava, 233 p.
- Nord, F. F., Hata, K., 1969: Fungal degradation of pine bark lignin. In: Kaplan, N. O., Kennedy, E. P. (eds.): Current Aspects of Biochemical. Academic Press, New York, U.S., p. 315–329.
- Ohman, J.H., 1970: Value loss from skidding wounds in sugar maple and yellow birch. *Journal of Forestry*, 68:226–230.
- Okada, T., Takeda, K., Hokura, K., Takahashi, S., 2007: Peeling damage to trees caused by cows grazing in an old larch forest. *Bulletin of the Shinshu University Alpine Field Center*, 5:51–54.
- Pfeffer, A., 1938: Lesní požáry v Československé republice v r. 1934. Prague, Státní výzkumný ústav pro ochranu lesů v Praze, 43 p.
- Pfeffer, A., (ed.), 1961: Ochrana lesů. Praha, SZN, 838 p.
- Pohořelý, M., Vilhelm, V., 1996: Lesní požáry a prevence. Praha, Česká pojišťovna, 83 p.
- Post, E., 1936: Systematische und pflanzengeographische Notizen zur Bostrychia-Caloglossa-assoziation. *Revue algologique*, 9:1–84.
- Predecka, A., 2011: Ogień w lesie a przyroda. Warsaw, Dyrekcja Generalna Lasów Państwowych, 166 p.
- Pűlpán, L., 2001: Vliv hospodaření na vznik hnilob. *Zprávy lesnického výzkumu*, 46:135–136.
- Reimoser, F., 2003: Steering the impact of ungulates on temperate forests. *Journal for Nature Conservation*, 10:243–252.
- Rönnerberg, J., Berglund, M., Johansson, U., Cleary, M. 2013: Incidence of *Heterobasidion* spp. following different thinning regimes in Norway spruce in southern Sweden. *Forest Ecology and Management*, 289:409–415.
- Shigo, A. L., 1986: A new tree biology. Durham, New Hampshire, Shigo & Tree Associates, 595 p.
- Sloup, M., Raba, J., 2004: Lesní hospodářství a požáry. In: Lesní požáry. Czech University of Life Science, p. 14–16.
- Stolina, M. (ed.), 1985: Ochrana lesa. Bratislava, Příroda, 473 p.
- Stolina, M., Kodrik, J., Novotný, J., Konôpka, J., Hlaváč, P., 2001: Ochrana lesa. Technical University in Zvolen, p. 67–75.
- Sviták, M., 2004: Požár rašeliny a lesního porostu Hrdlořezy u Nových Hradu. In: Lesní požáry. Czech University of Life Science.
- Svoboda, S., 1952: Život lesa. Prague, Brázda, 147 p.
- Tomášek, L., 2004: Organizace prevence proti vzniku lesních požárů u podniku Lesy České republiky. In: Lesní požáry. Czech University of Life Science, p. 17–23.
- Tomášek, L., 2007 [online] [2017-07-10]: Prevence vzniku lesních požárů u LČR. Lesnická práce, 86.
- Turček, F.J., Lehotan, T., 1949: Lesné požáre na Slovensku v r. 1947. Ročenka státního výzkumného ústavu 1:132–141.
- Vasiliauskas, R., 2001: Damage to trees due to forestry operations and its pathological significance in temperate forests: a literature review. *Forestry*, 74:319–336.
- Vasiliauskas, A., Stenlid, J., 2007: Discoloration following bark stripping wounds on *Fraxinus excelsior*. *European Journal Forest Pathology*, 28:383–390.
- Vlad, R., 2014: Assessment of the wood volume with stem decay in Norway spruce stands damaged by red deer. In: Proceedings of the Biennial International Symposium. Forest and sustainable development. Transilvania University Press, Braşov, Romania, p. 381–386.
- Vlad, R., Sidor, C. G., 2013: Research for the estimate of rotten stem wood volume in Norway spruce stand damaged by deer species. *Revista Pădurilor*, 128:27–32.
- Welsch, D., Scott, D., Staines, B., 1997: Bark stripping damage by red deer in Sitka spruce in Western Scotland. III. Trends in wound condition. *Forestry*, 70:113–120.
- Zeidler, A., 2012 [online] [2017-07-10]: Lexikon vad dřeva. Prague, Czech University of Life Sciences.
- Zpráva o stavu lesa a lesního hospodářství České republiky v roce 2015, 2016. Praha, Ministerstvo zemědělství, 133 p.

**Appendix A1. Internet links to hollow tree fires that are not included in FRS CR database:**

26. září 2012 – Požár stromu. [online] [2017-07-10]: Available at: <http://hasiciht.wz.cz/hasiciht.wz.cz/2012/09/26-zari-2012-Pozar-stromu.html>
3. Požár dutého stromu. [online] [2017-07-10]: Available at: [http://hasici.stenovice.cz/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=147:3-poar-duteho-stromu&catid=39:2008&Itemid=101](http://hasici.stenovice.cz/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=147:3-poar-duteho-stromu&catid=39:2008&Itemid=101)
- Hořel dutý kmen stromu i celý les, 2015: [online] [2017-07-10]. Available at: [https://www.regionvalassko.cz/aktuality\\_zobraz.php?lang=1&id=198&akt=9488&page=33](https://www.regionvalassko.cz/aktuality_zobraz.php?lang=1&id=198&akt=9488&page=33)
- Kohout, J., 2015: Sucho zaměstnává hlavně hasiče. Oheň řádil u Trpíst. [online] [2017-07-10]. Available at: <http://tachovsky.denik.cz/pozary/sucho-zamestnava-hlavne-hasice-ohen-radil-u-trpist-20150805.html>
- Kolischová, L., 2011: Nedopalek zapálil 150 let starý platan, strom už asi nepůjde zachránit. [online] [2017-07-10]. Available at: [http://zpravy.idnes.cz/horel-vzacny-150-let-stary-strom-mozna-uz-nepujde-zachranit-pnh-/domaci.aspx?c=A110403\\_130318\\_olomouc-zpravy\\_kol](http://zpravy.idnes.cz/horel-vzacny-150-let-stary-strom-mozna-uz-nepujde-zachranit-pnh-/domaci.aspx?c=A110403_130318_olomouc-zpravy_kol)
- Marvan, L., 2012: Ve Velkém Šenově hořel třicetimetrový strom, někdo ho zapálil. [online] [2017-07-10]. Available at: <https://www.pozary.cz/clanek/54931-ve-velkem-senove-horel-tricetimetrovy-strom-nekdo-ho-zapalil/>
- Marvan, L., 2015: Hromy a blesky létaly také nad Litoměřickem. [online] [2017-07-10]. Available at: [http://litomericky.denik.cz/zpravy\\_region/hromy-a-blesky-letaly-take-nad-litomerickem-20150428.html](http://litomericky.denik.cz/zpravy_region/hromy-a-blesky-letaly-take-nad-litomerickem-20150428.html)
- Požár dutého stromu 2. 8. 2015, 2015: [online] [2017-07-10]. Available at: <http://www.hasicihrusky.cz/news/pozar-duteho-stromu/>
- Sbor dobrovolných hasičů Kovářská, 2012: 14.9.2012 Lesní revír Špičák – požár stromu. [online] [2017-07-10]. Available at: <http://www.hasicikovarska.ic.cz/2012/2012-09-14/index.htm>



## **Appendix A2. Case study: Fighting a fire that was intentionally started by humans in lime trees**



**Fig. A.1.** Fighting an intentionally set fire in lime trees on the border of a mixed forest on 3 December 2011 (photo J. Vaněk).

### **Comment:**

On 3 December 2011, a fire that was intentionally started in a hollow lime tree was found on the border of a mixed forest. The burning hollow lime tree was located in the alley leading to the chapel at the top of Zámecký vrch in Stráž pod Ralskem. A stream of water was first used to extinguish the fire in the tree trunk, but this did not eliminate the entire fire. Either because of a branch break or a tree cut, a chimney effect occurred, and the fire moved up the trunk and into the branches. The tree was then felled and sprayed with water. The tree was finally cut into smaller pieces and was again sprayed with water (Fig. A.1).

## **Appendix A3. Firefighting procedures for hollow trees**

In practice, there are two methods to eliminate this type of fire:

### **1) Fighting the fire in the upright tree**

This is clearly the safer and easier of the two methods. It is more likely to be used with coniferous trees. Because such trees have relatively thin branches that are oriented downward at a sharp angle, the fire tends to remain in the trunk. The burning often results in holes in trunk where rotten branches were present. Firefighters will spray water into these holes as a way to get water into the burning, interior trunk. It is also possible to spray water into holes that the firefighters have drilled into the trunk.

### **2) Fighting the fire by first felling the tree**

This method is used with deciduous trees because both the trunk and skeletal branches of such tree are often affected by fire. Tree branches located high in the canopy do not usually burn. Skeletal branches that are oriented upward will help spread the fire. Fires in deciduous trees with many branches can be difficult to extinguish because the branches prevent the sprayed water from contacting smouldering branches. As a result, the risk of fire reactivation is high, and the fire can reactivate even after appearing to be extinguished for several days.

In this method, firefighters must be aware of the risk of falling branches. They must also be aware that during the felling process, the gas exchange conditions can change significantly and may increase the intensity of the fire. The firefighters can be damaged by both flames and radiant heat. Firefighters must also consider that in felling rotten and hollow trees, controlling the direction of the tree's fall may be difficult. Firefighters must further consider that the entire weight of the tree is supported only by the outer circular layer of wood and that such trees may therefore collapse without warning. Wedging of these trunks is usually not recommended because there is not enough wood around the circumference of the trunk to make wedging effective. Rather than cutting the tree, it might be possible to drop the tree with a rope.

Once the tree is felled, the flow of air and combustion gases inside the trunk will decrease, reducing the intensity of the fire. To facilitate the penetration of the extinguishing substance into the trunk, the felled tree can be cut into smaller parts. When cutting, a prepared water stream should be available to prevent the spread of fire to the surrounding trees.